This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

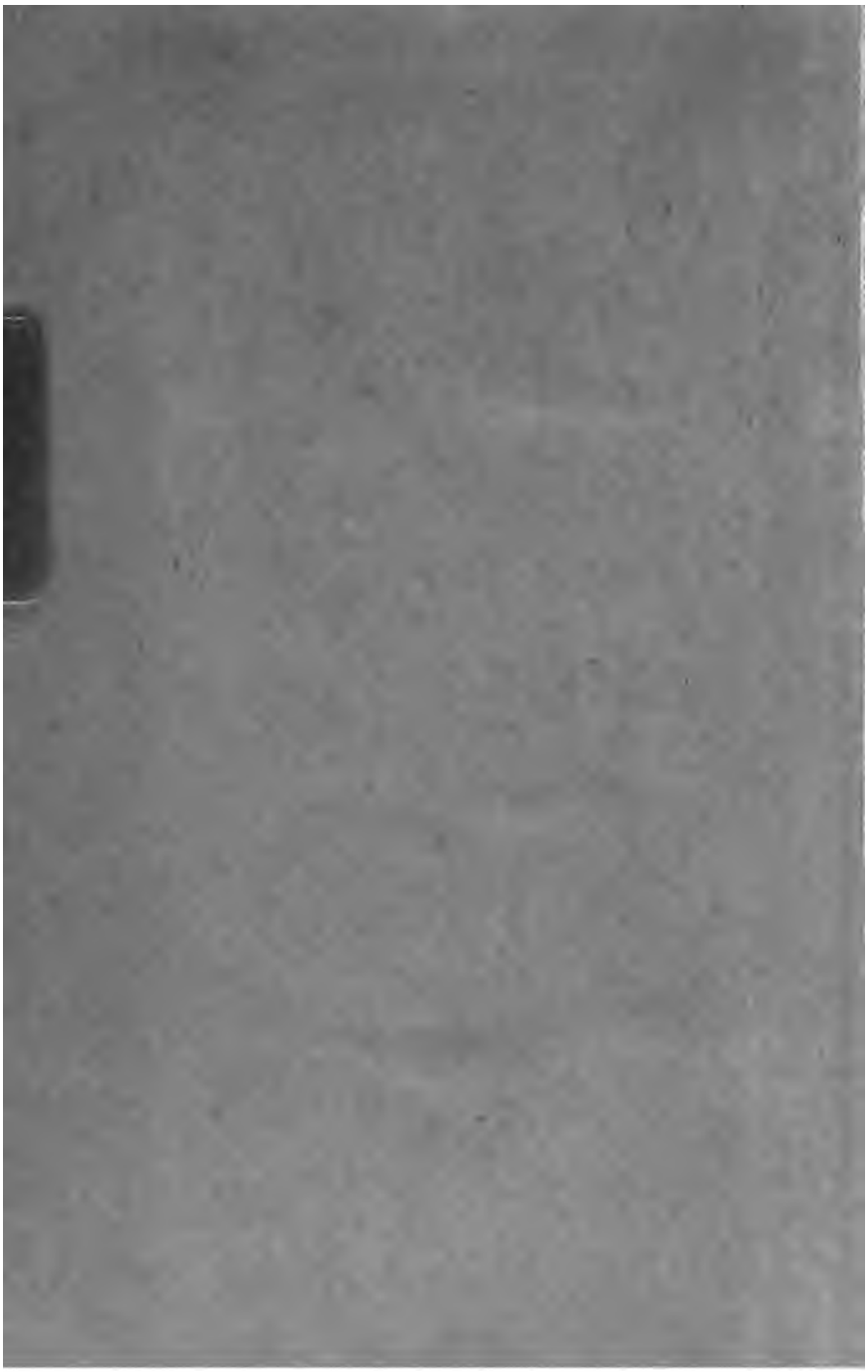
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07609604 3



THE

WORKS

OF THE

Rev. Dr. Jonathan Swift,

DEAN OF ST. PATRICK's, DUBLIN.

ARRANGED, REVISED, AND CORRECTED,
WITH NOTES,
By THOMAS SHERIDAN, A. M.

A NEW EDITION,
IN SEVENTEEN VOLUMES.
VOL. XVII.

LONDON:
Printed for C. BATHURST, W. STRAHAN, B. COLLINS,
J. F. & C. RIVINGTON, L. DAVIS, W. OWEN, J. DODSLEY,
T. LONGMAN, R. BALDWIN, T. CADELL,
J. NICHOLS, T. EGERTON, & W. BENT.
MDCCLXXXIV.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
89039A
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R

CONTENTS

TO THE

SEVENTEENTH VOLUME,

MARTINUS Scriblerus, *or the Art of Sinking in Poetry.* - - Page 1
His Eſſay on the Origin of Sciences. - 77
His Annus Mirabilis. - - 91
Straddling verſus *Stiles.* - - 101
A Key to the Lock. - 109
Memoirs of P. P. *Pariſh Clerk.* - 130
The Hiſtory of John Bull. - 145
On the Art of Political Lying. - 295
The humble Petition of Colliers, Cooks, &c. - 316
It cannot Rain but it Pours. - 321
Narrative of the Frenzy of John Dennis. - 327
An Account of the Poiſoning of Edward Curll. 342
Of the Circumciſion of Edward Curll. - 361
God's Revenge againſt Punning. - - 368
A wonderful Prophecy. - - 372
The Country Poſt. - - 376
A faithful Narrative of what paſſed in London, &c. 382
Thoughts on various Subjects. - - 398

POETRY.

The happy Life of a Country Parſon. - 419
A Tale of Chaucer. - - - 420
The Alley; an Imitation of Spencer. - 421
The Capon's Tale. - - - 423
The Elephant, or the Parliament-man. - - 424
Verſes to Barn. Lintot's *new Miſcellany.* - 426
To Mr. John Moore, *author of the celebrated Worm Powder.* - - - 427
Verſes occaſioned by an, &c. *after Mr.* D'Urfy's *name.* 429
Prologue deſigned for Mr. D'Urfy's *laſt play.* 432
Prologue to Three Hours after Marriage. - 433
Sandys's *Ghoſt.* - - 435
Umbra. - - - 438
Duke upon Duke. - - 439

Fragment of a Satire. - Page 444
Macer. - - 447
Sylvia. - - - - 448
Artemiſia. - - - 449
Phryne. - - - 450
Impromptu to Lady Winchelſea. - 451
Epigram. - - - ib.
To Mrs. Martha Blount, *on her birth-day.* 452
Song by a Perſon of Quality. - - 453
Ballad on Nelly. - - 454
Ode on the Longitude. - - 456
Epigram on Handel *and* Bononcini. - 457
On Mrs. Tofts. - - - ib.
Two or Three, or a Receipt to make a Cuckold. ib.
On a Lady at the Trogedy of Cato. - 458
Epigram in a Maid of Honour's Prayer-book. - ib.
The Balance of Europe. - ib.
A panegyrical Epiſtle to Mr. T. Snow. - 459
A Ballad on Quadrille. - - 462
Molly Mog. - - 465
A new Song of new Similes. - - 467
Newgate's Garland on Jonathan Wild. - 470
Strephon *and* Flavia. - - - 473
The Quidnunckis. - - 474
Aye and No; a Fable. - 476
The Lamentation of Glumdalclitch. - 478
Mary Gulliver *to Captain* Lem. Gulliver. 481
To Quinbus Fleſtrin. - - 485
A gentle Echo on Woman. - 487
Epitaph on Chartres. - - 489
Epigrams. - - 490
Epitaph of Bye-words. - - 491
Epigram from the French. - ib.
Epitaph. - - ib.
Epigram on the Kit-Kat Club. - 492
To a Lady, with the Temple of Fame. - ib.
Verſes on Sir J. Blackmore. - - 493
Bounce *to* Fop. - - 495
On the Counteſs of Burlington. - - 498
On a certain Lady at Court. - 499

MARTINUS SCRIBLERUS

ΠΕΡΙ ΒΑΘΟΥΣ:

OR,

Of the ART of

SINKING in POETRY.

WRITTEN IN THE YEAR 1727.

MARTINUS SCRIBLERUS

ΠΕΡΙ ΒΑΘΟΥΣ.

CHAP. I.

IT hath been long (my dear countrymen) the ſubject of my concern and ſurpriſe, that whereas numberleſs poets, critics, and orators have compiled and digeſted the art of ancient poeſy, there hath not riſen among us one perſon ſo publick-ſpirited, as to perform the like for the modern. Although it is univerſally known, that our every way induſtrious moderns, both in the weight of their writings, and in the velocity of their judgments, do ſo infinitely excel the ſaid ancients.

Nevertheleſs, too true it is, that while a plain and direct road is paved to their ὕψος, or ſublime; no track has been yet chalked out to arrive at our βάθος, or profund. The Latins, as they came between the greeks and us, make uſe of the word *altitudo*, which implies equally heighth and depth. Wherefore conſidering with no ſmall grief, how many promiſing geniuſes of this age are wandering (as I may ſay) in the dark without a guide, I have undertaken this arduous, but neceſſary taſk, to lead them as it were by the hand, and ſtep by

ſtep, the gentle down-hill way to the bathos; th bottom, the end, the central point, the *non plu ultra*, of true modern poeſy!

When I conſider (my dear countrymen) the ex tent, fertility, and populouſneſs of our lowlands o Parnaſſus, the flouriſhing ſtate of our trade, an the plenty of our manufacture; there are two re flections, which adminiſter great occaſion of ſur priſe; the one, that all dignities and honour ſhould be beſtowed upon the exceeding few meagr inhabitants of the top of the mountain; the other that our own nation ſhould have arrived to tha pitch of greatneſs it now poſſeſſes, without any re gular ſyſtem of laws. As to the firſt, it is witl great pleaſure I have obſerved of late the gradua decay of delicacy and refinement among mankind who are become too reaſonable to require, that we ſhould labour with infinite pains to come up to the taſte of theſe mountaineers, when they without any may condeſcend to ours. But as we have now an unqueſtionable majority on our ſide, I doubt not, but we ſhall ſhortly be able to level the high-landers, and procure a farther vent for our own product, which is already ſo much reliſhed, encouraged, and rewarded by the nobility and gentry of Great Britain.

Therefore to ſupply our former defect, I purpoſe to collect the ſcattered rules of our art, into regular inſtitutes from the example and practice of the deep geniuſes of our nation; imitating herein my predeceſſors, the maſter of Alexander, and the ſecretary of the renowned Zenobia: and in this my undertaking

dertaking I am the more animated, as I expect more ſucceſs than has attended even thoſe great critics; ſince their laws, though they might be good, have ever been ſlackly executed; and their precepts, however ſtrict, obeyed only by fits, and by a very ſmall number.

At the ſame time I intend to do juſtice upon our neighbours, inhabitants of the upper Parnaſſus; who, taking advantage of the riſing ground, are perpetually throwing down rubbiſh, dirt, and ſtones upon us, never ſuffering us to live in peace. Theſe men, while they enjoy the cryſtal ſtream of helicon, envy us our common water, which (thank our ſtars) though it is ſomewhat muddy, flows in much greater abundance. Nor is this the greateſt injuſtice, that we have to complain of: for, though it is evident that we never made the leaſt attempt or inrode into their territories, but lived contented in our native fens; they have often not only committed petty larcenies upon our borders, but driven the country, and carried off at once whole cart-loads of our manufacture; to reclaim ſome of which ſtolen goods is part of the deſign of this treatiſe.

For we ſhall ſee in the courſe of this work, that our greateſt adverſaries have ſometimes deſcended towards us; and doubtleſs might now and then have arrived at the bathos itſelf, had it not been for that miſtaken opinion they all entertained, that the rules of the ancients were equally neceſſary to the moderns; than which there cannot be a more

grievous error, as will be amply proved in the following diſcourſe.

And indeed when any of theſe have gone ſo far, as by the light of their own genius to attempt new models, it is wonderful to obſerve, how nearly they have approached us in thoſe particular pieces; though in their others they differed *toto cælo* from us.

CHAP. II.

That the bathos, or profund, is the natural taſte of man, and in particular of the preſent age.

THE taſte of the bathos is implanted by nature itſelf in the ſoul of man; till perverted by cuſtom or example, he is taught, or rather compelled to reliſh the ſublime. Accordingly, we ſee the unprejudiced minds of children delight only in ſuch productions, and in ſuch images, as our true modern writers ſet before them. I have obſerved, how faſt the general taſte is returning to this firſt ſimplicity and innocence; and if the intent of all poetry be to divert and inſtruct, certainly that kind, which diverts and inſtructs the greateſt number, is to be preferred. Let us look round among the admirers of poetry; we ſhall find thoſe, who have a taſte of the ſublime, to be very few; but the profund ſtrikes univerſally, and is adapted to every capacity. It is a fruitleſs undertaking to write for men of a nice and foppiſh guſto, whom after all it is almoſt impoſſible to pleaſe; and it is ſtill more chimerical

chimerical to write for poſterity, of whoſe taſte we cannot make any judgment, and whoſe applauſe we can never enjoy. It muſt be confeſſed, our wiſer authors have a preſent end,

Et prodeſſe volunt, et delectare poëtæ.

Their true deſign is profit or gain; in order to acquire which, it is neceſſary to procure applauſe by adminiſtring pleaſure to the reader: from whence it follows demonſtrably, that their productions muſt be ſuited to the preſent taſte. And I cannot but congratulate our age on this peculiar felicity, that though we have made indeed great progreſs in all other branches of luxury, we are not yet debauched with any high reliſh in poetry, but are in this one taſte leſs nice than our anceſtors. If an art is to be eſtimated by its ſucceſs, I appeal to experience, whether there have not been, in proportion to their number, as many ſtarving good poets, as bad ones?

Nevertheleſs, in making gain the principal end of our art, far be it from me to exclude any great geniuſes of rank or fortune from diverting themſelves this way. They ought to be praiſed no leſs than thoſe princes, who paſs their vacant hours in ſome ingenious mechanical or manual art. And to ſuch as theſe, it would be ingratitude not to own, that our art has been often infinitely indebted.

CHAP. III.

The neceſſity of the bathos phyſically conſidered.

FARTHERMORE, it were great cruelty and injuſtice, if all ſuch authors as cannot write in the other way, were prohibited from writing at all. Againſt this I draw an argument from what ſeems to me an undoubted phyſical maxim; that poetry is a natural or morbid ſecretion from the brain. As I would not ſuddenly ſtop a cold in the head, or dry up my neighbour's iſſue, I would as little hinder him from neceſſary writing. It may be affirmed with great truth, that there is hardly any human creature paſt childhood, but at one time or other has had ſome poetical evacuation, and, no queſtion, was much the better for it in his health; ſo true is the ſaying, *naſcimur poëtæ*. Therefore is the deſire of writing properly termed *pruritus*, the "titillation of the generative faculty of the brain," and the perſon is ſaid to conceive: now, ſuch as conceive, muſt bring forth. I have known a man thoughtful, melancholy, and raving for divers days, who forthwith grew wonderfully eaſy, lightſome, and cheerful, upon a diſcharge of the peccant humour in exceeding purulent metre. Nor can I queſtion, but abundance of untimely deaths are occaſioned for want of this laudable vent of unruly paſſions: yea, perhaps, in poor wretches (which is very lamentable) for meer want of pen, ink, and paper! From hence it follows, that a ſuppreſſion

preſſion of the very worſt poetry is of dangerous conſequence to the ſtate. We find by experience, that the ſame humours which vent themſelves in ſummer in ballads and ſonnets, are condenſed by the winter's cold into pamphlets and ſpeeches for and againſt the miniſtry: nay, I know not, but many times a piece of poetry may be the moſt innocent compoſition of a miniſter himſelf.

It is therefore manifeſt, that mediocrity ought to be allowed, yea indulged, to the good ſubjects of England. Nor can I conceive how the world has ſwallowed the contrary as a maxim, upon the ſingle authority of * Horace. Why ſhould the golden mean, and quinteſſence of all virtues, be deemed ſo offenſive in this art? or coolneſs or mediocrity be ſo amiable a quality in a man, and ſo deteſtable in a poet?

However, far be it from me to compare theſe writers with thoſe great ſpirits, who are born with a *vivacité de peſanteur*, or (as an Engliſh author calls it) an "alacrity of ſinking †;" and who by ſtrength of nature alone can excel. All I mean, is, to evince the neceſſity of rules to theſe leſſer geniuſes, as well as the uſefulneſs of them to the greater.

* ———————— Mediocribus eſſe poetis
Non dii, non homines, &c.—— HOR.

† Spoken by Falſtaff of himſelf in Shakeſpear's Merry Wives of Windſor.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

That there is an art of the bathos, or profund.

WE come now to prove, that there is an art of ſinking in poetry. Is there not an architecture of vaults and cellars, as well as of lofty domes and pyramids? Is there not as much ſkill and labour in making ditches, as in raiſing mounts? Is there not an art of diving as well as of flying? and will any ſober practitioner affirm, that a diving engine is not of ſingular uſe in making him long-winded, aſſiſting his deſcent, and furniſhing him with more ingenious means of keeping under water?

If we ſearch the authors of antiquity, we ſhall find as few to have been diſtinguiſhed in the true profund, as in the true ſublime. And the very ſame thing (as it appears from Longinus) had been imagined of that, as now of this; namely, that it was entirely the gift of nature. I grant, that to excel in the bathos a genius is requiſite; yet the rules of art muſt be allowed ſo far uſeful, as to add weight, or as I may ſay, hang on lead to facilitate and enforce our deſcent, to guide us to the moſt advantageous declivities, and habituate our imagination to a depth of thinking. Many there are that can fall, but few can arrive at the felicity of falling gracefully; much more for a man, who is among the loweſt of the creation, at the very bottom of the atmoſphere; to deſcend beneath himſelf,

ſelf, is not ſo eaſy a taſk unleſs he calls in art to his aſſiſtance. It is with the bathos as with ſmall beer, which is indeed vapid and inſipid, if left at large and let abroad; but being by our rules confined and well ſtopt, nothing grows ſo frothy, pert, and bouncing.

The ſublime of nature is the ſky, the ſun, moon, ſtars, *&c.* The profund of nature is gold, pearls, precious ſtones, and the treaſures of the deep, which are ineſtimable as unknown. But all that lies between theſe, as corn, flower, fruits, animals, and things for the mere uſe of man, are of mean price, and ſo common as not to be greatly eſteemed by the curious. It being certain that any thing, of which we know the true uſe, cannot be invaluable: which affords a ſolution, why common ſenſe hath either been totally deſpiſed, or held in ſmall repute, by the greateſt modern critics and authors.

CHAP. V.

Of the true genius for the profund, and by what it is conſtituted.

AND I will venture to lay it down as the firſt maxim, and corner-ſtone of this our art, that whoever would excel therein, muſt ſtudiouſly avoid, deteſt, and turn his head from all the ideas, ways, and workings of that peſtilent foe to wit, and deſtroyer of fine figures, which is known by the name of common ſenſe. His buſineſs muſt be to contract the true *gout de travers;* and to acquire a moſt

a moſt happy, uncommon, unaccountable way of thinking.

He is to conſider himſelf as a groteſque painter, whoſe works would be ſpoiled by an imitation of nature, or uniformity of deſign. He is to mingle bits of the moſt various, or diſcordant kinds, landſcape, hiſtory, portraits, animals; and connect them with a great deal of flouriſhing, by head or tail, as it ſhall pleaſe his imagination, and contribute to his principal end; which is, to glare by ſtrong oppoſitions of colours, and ſurpriſe by contrariety of images.

Serpentes avibus geminentur, tigribus agni. HOR.

His deſign ought to be like a labyrinth, out of which no body can get clear but himſelf. And ſince the great art of all poetry is to mix truth with fiction, in order to join the credible with the ſurpriſing, our author ſhall produce the credible, by painting nature in her loweſt ſimplicity; and the ſurpriſing, by contradicting common opinion. In the very ſame manner he will affect the marvellous; he will draw Achilles with the patience of Job; a prince talking like a jack-pudding; a maid of honour ſelling bargains; a footman ſpeaking like a philoſopher; and a fine gentleman like a ſcholar. Whoever is converſant in modern plays, may make a moſt noble collection of this kind, and at the ſame time form a complete body of modern ethics and morality.

Nothing ſeemed more plain to our great authors, than that the world hath long been weary of natural

tural things. How much the contrary are formed to pleaſe, is evident from the univerſal applauſe daily given to the admirable entertainments of harlequins and magicians on our ſtage. When an audience behold a coach turned into a wheelbarrow, a conjurer into an old woman, or a man's head where his heels ſhould be; how are they ſtruck with tranſport and delight? which can only be imputed to this cauſe, that each object is changed into that which hath been ſuggeſted to them by their own low ideas before.

He ought therefore to render himſelf maſter of this happy and anti-natural way of thinking, to ſuch a degree, as to be able, on the appearance of any object, to furniſh his imagination with ideas infinitely below it. And his eyes ſhould be like unto the wrong end of a perſpective glaſs, by which all the objects of nature are leſſened.

For example; when a true genius looks upon the ſky, he immediately catches the idea of a piece of blue lute-ſtring, or a child's mantle.

* The ſkies, whoſe ſpreading volumes ſcarce have room,
Spun thin, and wove in nature's fineſt loom,
The new-born world in their ſoft lap embrac'd,
And all around their ſtarry mantle caſt.

If he looks upon a tempeſt, he ſhall have an image of a tumbled bed, and deſcribe a ſucceeding calm in this manner;

† The ocean, joyed to ſee the tempeſt fled,
New lays his waves, and ſmooths his ruffled bed.

* Prince Arthur, p. 41, 42. † P. 14.

The

The triumphs and acclamations of the angels at the creation of the univerſe preſent to his imagination "the rejoicings on the lord mayor's day;" and he beholds thoſe glorious beings celebrating their creator, by huzzaing, making illuminations, and flinging ſquibs, crackers, and ſky-rockets.

* Glorious illuminations, made on high,
By all the ſtars and planets of the ſky,
In juſt degrees, and ſhining order placed,
Spectators charm'd, and the bleſt dwellings graced.
Through all the enlighten'd air ſwift fire-works flew,
Which with repeated ſhouts glad cherubs threw.
Comets aſcended with their ſweeping train,
Then fell in ſtarry ſhowers and glittering rain.
In air ten thouſand meteors blazing hung,
Which from th' eternal battlements were flung.

If a man, who is violently fond of wit, will ſacrifice to that paſſion his friend or his God, would it not be a ſhame, if he who is ſmit with the love of the bathos, ſhould not ſacrifice to it all other tranſitory regards? You ſhall hear a zealous proteſtant deacon invoke a ſaint, and modeſtly beſeech her to do more for us than Providence.

† Look down, bleſt ſaint, with pity then look down,
Shed on this land thy kinder influence,
And guide us through the miſts of providence,
In which we ſtray.———

* Prince Arthur, p. 50.

N. B. In order to do juſtice to theſe great poets, our citations are taken from the beſt, the laſt, and moſt correct editions of their works. That which we uſe of Prince Arthur, is in *duodecimo*, 1714. the fourth edition reviſed.

† A. Philips on the death of Queen Mary.

Neither will he, if a goodly ſimile come in his way, ſcruple to affirm himſelf an eye-witneſs of things never yet beheld by man, or never in exiſtence; as thus,

* Thus have I ſeen in Araby the bleſt
A phœnix couch'd upon her funeral neſt.

But to convince you, that nothing is ſo great, which a marvellous genius prompted by this laudable zeal is not able to leſſen; hear how the moſt ſublime of all beings is repreſented in the following images.

Firſt he is a PAINTER.

† Sometimes the lord of nature in the air
Spreads forth his clouds, his ſable canvas, where
His pencil, dipt in heavenly colour bright,
Paints his fair rain-bow, charming to the ſight.

Now he is a CHEMIST.

‡ Th' almighty chemiſt does his work prepare,
Pours down his waters on the thirſty plain,
Digeſts his lightening, and diſtils his rain.

Now he is a WRESTLER.

§ Me in his griping arms th' eternal took,
And with ſuch mighty force my body ſhook,
That the ſtrong graſp my members ſolely bruis'd,
Broke all my bones, and all my ſinews loos'd.

* Anon. † Blackm. opt. edit. duod. 1716. p. 172.
‡ Black. Pſ. civ. p. 263. § Page 75.

Now

Now a RECRUITING OFFICER.

* For clouds the ſun-beams levy freſh ſupplies,
And raiſe recruits of vapours, which ariſe
Drawn from the ſeas, to muſter in the ſkies.

Now a peaceable GUARANTEE.

† In leagues of peace the neighbours did agree,
And to maintain them God was guarantee.

Then he is an ATTORNEY.

‡ Job, as a vile offender, God indites,
And terrible decrees againſt me writes,
God will not be my advocate,
My cauſe to manage or debate.

In the following lines he is a GOLDBEATER.

§ Who the rich metal beats, and then with care
Unfolds the golden leaves to gild the fields of air.

Then a FULLER.

‖ ——— th' exhaling reeks, that ſecret riſe,
Born on rebounding ſun-beams through the ſkies.
Are thicken'd, wrought, and whiten'd, till they grow
A heavenly fleece———

A MERCER, or PACKER.

¶ Didſt thou one end of air's wide curtain hold,
And help the bales of Æther to unfold;
Say, which cærulean pile was by thy hand enroll'd?

* Black. Pſ. civ. p. 170. † P. 70. ‡ P. 61.
§ P. 181. ‖ P. 18. ¶ P. 174.

A BUTLER.

A BUTLER.

* He meaſures all the drops with wondrous ſkill,
Which the black clouds, his floating bottles, fill.

And a BAKER.

† God in the wilderneſs his table ſpread,
And in his airy ovens bak'd their bread.

CHAP. VI.

Of the ſeveral kinds of geniuſes in the profund, and the marks, and characters of each.

I DOUBT not, but the reader, by this cloud of examples, begins to be convinced of the truth of our aſſertion, that the bathos is an art; and that the genius of no mortal whatever, following the mere ideas of nature, and unaſſiſted with an habitual, nay laborious peculiarity of thinking, could arrive at images ſo wonderfully low and unaccountable. The great author, from whoſe treaſury we have drawn all theſe inſtances (the father of the bathos, and indeed the Homer of it) has, like that immortal Greek, confined his labours to the greater poetry, and thereby left room for others to acquire a due ſhare of praiſe in inferior kinds. Many painters, who could never hit a noſe or an eye, have with felicity copied a ſmall-pox, or been admirable at a toad or a red-herring: and ſeldom are

* Black. Pſal. p. 131. † Black. Song of Moſes, p. 218.

we without geniuſes for ſtill-life, which they can work up and ſtiffen with incredible accuracy.

A univerſal genius riſes not in an age; but when he riſes, armies riſe in him! he pours forth five or ſix epic poems with greater facility, than five or ſix pages can be produced by an elaborate and ſervile copier after nature or the ancients. It is affirmed by Quintilian, that the ſame genius, which made Germanicus ſo great a general, would, with equal application, have made him an excellent heroic poet. In like manner, reaſoning from the affinity there appears between arts and ſciences, I doubt not, but an active catcher of butterflies, a careful and fanciful pattern-drawer, an induſtrious collector of ſhells, a laborious and tuneful bag-piper, or a diligent breeder of tame rabbits, might ſeverally excel in their reſpective parts of the bathos.

I ſhall range theſe confined and leſs copious geniuſes under proper claſſes, and (the better to give their pictures to the reader) under the names of animals of ſome ſort or other; whereby he will be enabled, at the firſt ſight of ſuch as ſhall daily come forth, to know to what kind to refer, and with what authors to compare them.

1. The flying fiſhes: theſe are writers, who now and then riſe upon their fins, and fly out of the profund; but their wings are ſoon dry, and they drop down to the bottom. G. S. A. H. C. G.

2. The ſwallows are authors, that are eternally ſkimming and fluttering up and down, but all their agility

agility is employed to catch flies. L. T. W. P. Lord H.

3. The oſtriches are ſuch, whoſe heavineſs rarely permits them to raiſe themſelves from the ground; their wings are of no uſe to lift them up, and their motion is between flying and walking; but then they run very faſt. D. F. L. E. the hon. E. H.

4. The parrots are they, that repeat another's words in ſuch a hoarſe odd voice, as makes them ſeem their own. W. B. W. S. C. C. the reverend D. D.

5. The didappers are authors, that keep themſelves long out of ſight, under water, and come up now and then, where you leaſt expected them. L. W. G. D. Eſq. the hon. Sir W. Y.

6. The porpoiſes are unweildy and big; they put all their numbers into a great turmoil and tempeſt, but whenever they appear in plain light (which is ſeldom) they are only ſhapeleſs and ugly monſters. I. D. C. G. I. O.

7. The frogs are ſuch, as can neither walk nor fly, but can leap and bound to admiration: they live generally in the bottom of a ditch, and make a great noiſe, whenever they thruſt their heads above water. E. W. I. M. Eſq. T. D. gent.

8. The eels are obſcure authors, that wrap themſelves up in their own mud, but are mighty nimble and pert. L. W. L. T. P. M. general C.

9. The tortoiſes are ſlow and chill, and like paſtoral writers, delight much in gardens: they have for the moſt part a fine embroider'd ſhell, and underneath

derneath it a heavy lump. A. P. W. B. L. E. The right hon. E. of S.

Theſe are the chief characteriſtics of the bathos, and in each of theſe kinds we have the comfort to be bleſſed with ſundry and manifold choice ſpirits in this our iſland.

CHAP. VII.

Of the profund, when it conſiſts in the thought.

WE have already laid down the principles, upon which our author is to proceed, and the manner of forming his thought by familiarizing his mind to the loweſt objects; to which, it may be added, that vulgar converſation will greatly contribute. There is no queſtion, but the garret or the printer's-boy may often be diſcerned in the compoſitions made in ſuch ſcenes and company; and much of Mr. Curl himſelf has been inſenſibly infuſed into the works of his learned writers.

The phyſician, by the ſtudy and inſpection of urine and ordure, approves himſelf in the ſcience; and in like ſort, ſhould our author accuſtom and exerciſe his imagination upon the dregs of nature.

This will render his thoughts truly and fundamentally low, and carry him many fathoms beyond mediocrity. For, certain it is (though ſome lukewarm heads imagine they may be ſafe by temporizing between the extremes) that where there is not a triticalneſs or mediocrity in the thought, it

can never be ſunk into the genuine and perfect bathos by the moſt elaborate low expreſſion: it can, at moſt, be only carefully obſcured, or metaphorically debaſed. But, it is the thought alone that ſtrikes, and gives the whole that ſpirit, which we admire and ſtare at. For inſtance, in that ingenious piece on a lady's drinking the Bath-waters:

* She drinks! ſhe drinks! behold the matchleſs dame!
To her 'tis water, but to us 'tis flame:
Thus fire is water, water fire by turns,
And the ſame ſtream at once both cools and burns.

What can be more eaſy and unaffected, than the diction of theſe verſes? it is the turn of thought alone, and the variety of imagination, that charm and ſurpriſe us. And when the ſame lady goes into the bath, the thought (as in juſtneſs it ought) goes ſtill deeper:

† Venus beheld her, 'midſt her crowd of ſlaves,
And thought herſelf juſt riſen from the waves.

How much out of the way of common ſenſe is this reflection of Venus, not knowing herſelf from the lady?

Of the ſame nature is that noble miſtake of a frighted ſtag in a full chace, who, ſaith the poet—

Hears his own feet, and thinks they ſound like more;
And fears the hind-feet will o'ertake the fore.

* Anon. † Idem.

So aſtoniſhing as theſe are, they yield to the following, which is profundity itſelf.

* None but himſelf can be his parallel.

Unleſs it may ſeem borrowed from the thought of that maſter of a ſhow in Smithfield, who writ in large letters over the picture of his elephant,

This is the greateſt elephant in the world, except himſelf.

However our next inſtance is certainly an original. Speaking of a beautiful infant,

So fair thou art, that if great Cupid be
A child, as poets ſay, ſure thou art he.
Fair Venus would miſtake thee for her own,
Did not thy eyes proclaim thee not her ſon.
There all the lightnings of thy mother's ſhine,
And with a fatal brightneſs kill in thine.

Firſt he is Cupid, then he is not Cupid; firſt Venus would miſtake him, then ſhe would not miſtake him; next his eyes are his mother's, and laſtly they are not his mother's, but his own.

Another author deſcribing a poet, that ſhines forth amid a circle of criticks,

Thus Phœbus through the zodiack takes his way,
And amid monſters riſes into day.

What a peculiarity is here of invention, the author's pencil, like the wand of Circe, turns all into monſters at a ſtroke. A great genius takes things

* Theobald, Double Falſhood.

in the lump, without ſtopping at minute conſiderations: in vain might the ram, the bull, the goat, the lion, the crab, the ſcorpion, the fiſhes, all ſtand in its way, as mere natural animals: much more might it be pleaded, that a pair of ſcales, an old man, and two innocent children, were no monſters: there were only the centaur and the maid, that could be eſteemed out of nature. But what of that? with a boldneſs peculiar to theſe daring geniuſes, what he found not monſters, he made ſo.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the profund, conſiſting in the circumſtances: and of amplification and periphraſe in general.

WHAT in a great meaſure diſtinguiſhes other writers from ours, is their chooſing and ſeparating ſuch circumſtances in a deſcription, as enoble or elevate the ſubject.

The circumſtances, which are moſt natural, are obvious, therefore not aſtoniſhing or peculiar: but thoſe, that are far-fetched or unexpected, or hardly compatible, will ſurprize prodigiouſly. Theſe therefore we muſt principally hunt out; but above all preſerve a laudable prolixity; preſenting the whole and every ſide at once of the image to view. For, choice and diſtinction are not only a curb to the ſpirit, and limit the deſcriptive faculty, but alſo leſſen the book; which is frequently the worſt conſequence of all to our author.

Job ſays in ſhort, he waſhed his feet in butter; a circumſtance ſome poets would have ſoftened, or

paſt over: now hear how this butter is ſpread out by the great genius.

* With teats diſtended with their milky ſtore,
Such num'rous lowing herds, before my door,
Their painful burthen to unload did meet,
That we with butter might have waſh'd our feet.

How cautious and particular! "he had (ſays our author) ſo many herds, which herds thrived "ſo well, and thriving ſo well gave ſo much milk, "and that milk produced ſo much butter, that, if "he did not, he might have waſhed his feet in "it."

The enſuing deſcription of hell is no leſs remarkable in the circumſtances.

† In flaming heaps the raging ocean rolls,
Whoſe livid waves involve deſpairing ſouls;
The liquid burnings dreadful colours ſhew,
Some deeply red and others faintly blue.

Could the moſt minute Dutch-painter have been more exact? how inimitably circumſtantial is this alſo of a war-horſe!

‡ His eye-balls burn, he wounds the ſmoaking plain,
And knots of ſcarlet riband deck his mane.

Of certain Cudgel-players.

They brandiſh high in air their threat'ning ſtaves,
§ Their hands a woven guard of ozier ſaves,
In which they fix their hazel weapon's end.

* Blackm. Job, p. 133. † Pr. Arth. p. 89.
‡ Anon. § Pr. Arthur, p. 197.

Who

Who would not think the poet had paſt his whole life at wakes in ſuch laudable diverſions? ſince he teaches us how to hold, nay how to make a cudgel!

Periphraſe is another great aid to prolixity; being a diffuſed circumlocutory manner of expreſſing a known idea, which ſhould be ſo myſteriouſly couched, as to give the reader the pleaſure of gueſſing what it is, that the author can poſſibly mean; and a ſtrange ſurprize, when he finds it?

The poet I laſt mentioned is incomparable in this figure.

* A waving ſea of heads was round me ſpread,
And ſtill freſh ſtreams the gazing deluge fed.

Here is a waving ſea of heads, which by a freſh ſtream of heads grows to be a gazing deluge of heads. You come at laſt to find, it means a great crowd.

How pretty and how genteel is the following!

† Nature's confectioner ——
Whoſe ſuckets are moiſt alchymy:
The ſtill of his refining mold
Minting the garden into gold.

What is this, but a bee gathering honey?

‡ Little Syren of the ſtage,
Empty warbler, breathing lyre,
Wanton gale of fond deſire,
Tuneful miſchief, vocal ſpell.——

* Job, p. 78. † Cleveland. ‡ A. Philips to Cuzzona.

Who

Who would think, this was only a poor gentlewoman, that ſung finely?

We may define amplification to be making the moſt of a thought; it is the ſpinning-wheel of the bathos, which draws out and ſpreads it into the fineſt thread. There are amplifiers, who can extend half a dozen thin thoughts over a whole folio; but for which, the tale of many a vaſt romance, and the ſubſtance of many a fair volume, might be reduced to the ſize of a primmer.

In the book of Job are theſe words, "Haſt thou "commanded the morning, and cauſed the day-"ſpring to know his place?" how is this extended by the moſt celebrated amplifier of our age?

* Canſt thou ſet forth th' etherial mines on high,
Which the refulgent ore of light ſupply?
Is the celeſtial furnace to thee known,
In which I melt the golden metal down?
Treaſures, from whence I deal out light as faſt,
As all my ſtars and laviſh ſuns can waſte.

The ſame author has amplified a paſſage in the civth pſalm; "he looks on the earth, and it "trembles. He touches the hills, and they "ſmoke."

† The hills forget they're fix'd, and in their fright
Caſt off their weight, and eaſe themſelves for flight:
The woods with terror wing'd out-fly the wind,
And leave the heavy, panting hills behind.

You here ſee the hills not only trembling, but ſhaking off woods from their backs, to run the

* Job. p. 108. † P. 267.

faſter:

faſter: after this you are preſented with a foot-race of mountains and woods, where the woods diſtance the mountains, that, like corpulent purſy fellows, come puffing and panting a vaſt way behind them.

CHAP. IX.

Of imitation, and the manner of imitating.

THAT the true authors of the profund are to imitate diligently the examples in their own way, is not to be queſtioned, and that divers have by this means attained to a depth, whereunto their own weight could never have carried them, is evident by ſundry inſtances. Who ſees not that De Foe was the poetical ſon of Withers, Tate of Ogilby, E. Ward of John Taylor, and Euſden of Blackmore? Therefore when we ſit down to write, let us bring ſome great author to our mind, and aſk ourſelves this queſtion; how would Sir Richard have ſaid this? do I expreſs myſelf as ſimply as Ambroſe Philips? or flow my numbers with the quiet thoughtleſſneſs of Mr. Welſted?

But it may ſeem ſomewhat ſtrange to aſſert, that our proficient ſhould alſo read the works of thoſe famous poets, who have excelled in the ſublime: yet is not this a paradox, As Virgil is ſaid to have read Ennius, out of his dunghill to draw gold; ſo may our author read Shakeſpear, Milton, and Dryden, for the contrary end, to bury their gold in his own dunghill. A true genius, when he finds any thing lofty or ſhining in them, will have the

ſkill to bring it down, take off the gloſs, or quite diſcharge the colour, by ſome ingenious circumſtance or periphraſe, ſome addition or diminution or by ſome of thoſe figures, the uſe of which we ſhall ſhew in our next chapter.

The book of Job is acknowledged to be infinitely ſublime, and yet has not the father of the bathos reduced it in every page? is there a paſſage in all Virgil more painted up and laboured than the deſcription of Ætna in the third Æneid?

——Horrificis juxta tonat Ætna ruinis,
Interdumque atram prorumpit ad æthera nubem,
Turbine fumantem piceo, & candente favilla,
Attollitque globos flammarum, & ſidera lambit:
Interdum ſcopulos avulſaque viſcera montis
Erigit eructans, liquefactaque ſaxa ſub auras
Cum gemitu glomerat, fundoque exæſtuat imo.

(I beg pardon of the gentle Engliſh reader, and ſuch of our writers as underſtand not Latin.) Lo! how this is taken down by our Britiſh poet, by the ſingle happy thought of throwing the mountain into a fit of the cholic.

* Ætna, and all the burning mountains, find
Their kindled ſtores with inbred ſtorms of wind
Blown up to rage; and roaring out, complain,
As torn with inward gripes, and tort'ring pain:
Lab'ring, they caſt their dreadful vomit round,
And with their melted bowels ſpread the ground.

Horace, in ſearch of the ſublime, ſtruck his head againſt the ſtars †; but Empedocles, to fathom the

* Pr. Arthur, p. 75. † Sublimi feriam ſidera vertice.

profund

profund, threw himſelf into Ætna. And who but would imagine our excellent modern had alſo been there, from this deſcription?

Imitation is of two ſorts; the firſt is, when we force to our own purpoſes the thoughts of others; the ſecond, conſiſts in copying the imperfections or blemiſhes of celebrated authors. I have ſeen a play profeſſedly writ in the ſtyle of Shakeſpear, wherein the reſemblance lay in one ſingle line,

And ſo good morrow t'ye, good maſter lieutenant.

And ſundry poems in imitation of Milton, where, with the utmoſt exactneſs, and not ſo much as one exception, nevertheleſs was conſtantly nathleſs, embroidered was broidered, hermits were eremites, diſdained was 'ſdeigned, ſhady umbrageous, enterprize emprize, pagan paynin, pinions pennons, ſweet dulcet, orchards orchats, bridge-work pontifical; nay her was hir, and their was thir through the whole poem. And in very deed, there is no other way, by which the true modern poet could read to any purpoſe the works of ſuch men, as Milton and Shakeſpear.

It may be expected, that like other critics I ſhould next ſpeak of the paſſions: but as the main end and principal effect of the bathos is to produce tranquillity of mind (and ſure it is a better deſign to promote ſleep than madneſs) we have little to ſay on this ſubject. Nor will the ſhort bounds of this diſcourſe allow us to treat at large of the emollients and opiats of poeſy; of the cool, and the manner of producing it; or of the methods uſed

by

by our authors in managing the paſſions. I ſhall but tranſiently remark, that nothing contributes ſo much to the cool, as the uſe of wit in expreſſing paſſion: the true genius rarely fails of points, conceits, and proper ſimiles on ſuch occaſions: this we may term the pathetic epigrammatical, in which even puns are made uſe of with good ſucceſs. Hereby our beſt authors have avoided throwing themſelves or their readers into any indecent tranſports.

But, as it is ſometimes needful to excite the paſſions of our antagoniſt in the polemick way, the true ſtudents in the law have conſtantly taken their methods from low life, where they obſerved, that to move anger, uſe is made of ſcolding and railing; to move love, of bawdry; to beget favour and friendſhip, of groſs flattery; and to produce fear, of calumniating an adverſary with crimes obnoxious to the ſtate. As for ſhame, it is a ſilly paſſion, of which as our authors are incapable themſelves, ſo they would not produce it in others.

CHAP. X.

Of tropes and figures: and firſt of the variegating, confounding, and reverſing figures.

BUT we proceed to the figures. We cannot too earneſtly recommend to our authors the ſtudy of the abuſe of ſpeech. They ought to lay it down as a principle, to ſay nothing in the uſual way, but (if poſſible) in the direct contrary. Therefore the figures muſt be ſo turned, as to ma-

nif-

nifeſt that intricate and wonderful caſt of head, which diſtinguiſhes all writers of this kind: or (as I may ſay) to refer exactly the mold, in which they were formed, in all its inequalities, cavities, obliquities, odd crannies, and diſtortions.

It would be endleſs, nay impoſſible to enumerate all ſuch figures; but we ſhall content ourſelves to range the principal, which moſt powerfully contribute to the bathos, under three claſſes.

I. The variegating, confounding, or reverſing tropes and figures.

II. The magnifying, and

III. The diminiſhing.

We cannot avoid giving to theſe the Greek or Roman names; but in tenderneſs to our countrymen and fellow writers, many of whom, however exquiſite, are wholly ignorant of thoſe languages, we have alſo explained them in our mother tongue.

Of the firſt ſort, nothing ſo much conduces to the bathos, as the

CATACHRESIS.

A maſter of this will ſay,

Mow the beard,
Shave the graſs,
Pin the plank,
Nail my ſleeve.

From whence reſults the ſame kind of pleaſure to the mind, as to the eye, when we behold harlequin trimming himſelf with a hatchet, hewing down a tree with a raſor, making his tea in a cauldron, and brewing his ale in a tea-pot, to the incredible

ſatisfaction

ſatisfaction of the Britiſh ſpectator. Another ſource of the bathos is,

The METONYMY,

the inverſion of cauſes for effects, of inventors for inventions, *&c.*

Lac'd in her * Coſins new appeared the bride,
A † Bubble-boy and ‡ Tompion at her ſide,
And with an air divine her § Colmar ply'd,
Then oh! ſhe cries, what ſlaves I round me ſee?
Here a bright Red-coat, there a ſmart ‖ Toupée.

The SYNECDOCHE,

which conſiſts in the uſe of a part for the whole. You may call a young woman ſometimes pretty-face and pigs-eyes, and ſometimes ſnotty-noſe and draggle-tail. Or, of accidents, for perſons; as a lawyer, is called ſplit-cauſe, a taylor, prick-louſe, *&c.* Or of things belonging to a man, for the man himſelf; as a ſword-man, a gown-man, a t-m-t-d-man; a white-ſtaff, a turn-key, &c.

The APOSIOPESIS,

an excellent figure for the ignorant, as "what "ſhall I ſay;" when one has nothing to ſay: or "I can no more," when one really can no more. Expreſſions which the gentle reader is ſo good as never to take in earneſt.

* Stays. † Tweezer-caſe. ‡ Watch. § Fan.
‖ A ſort of perriwig: all words in uſe at this preſent year 1727.

The

The METAPHOR.

The firſt rule is to draw it from the loweſt things, which is a certain way to ſink the higheſt; as when you ſpeak of the thunder of heaven, ſay,

* The lords above are angry and talk big.

Or if you would deſcribe a rich man refunding his treaſures, expreſs it thus,

† Tho' he (as ſaid) may riches gorge, the ſpoil
Painful in maſſy vomit ſhall recoil:
Soon ſhall he periſh with a ſwift decay,
Like his own ordure, caſt with ſcorn away.

The ſecond, that whenever you ſtart a metaphor, you muſt be ſure to run it down, and purſue it as far as it can go. If you get the ſcent of a ſtate negotiation, follow it in this manner:

‡ The ſtones and all the elements with thee
Shall ratify a ſtrict confederacy;
Wild beaſts their ſavage temper ſhall forget,
And for a firm alliance with thee treat;
The finny tyrant of the ſpacious ſeas
Shall ſend a ſcaly embaſſy for peace:
His plighted faith the crocodile ſhall keep,
And ſeeing thee, for joy ſincerely weep.

Or if you repreſent the Creator denouncing war againſt the wicked, be ſure not to omit one circumſtance uſual in proclaiming and levying war.

* Lee Alex. † Blackm. Job, p. 91, 93. ‡ Job, p. 22.

* Envoys and agents, who by my command
Reſide in Paleſtina's land,
To whom commiſſions I have given
To manage there the intereſts of heaven.
Ye holy heralds, who proclaim
Or war or peace, in mine your maſter's name,——
Ye pioneers of heaven, prepare a road,
Make it plain, direct and broad;——
For I in perſon will my people head;
———For the divine deliverer
Will on his march in majeſty appear,
And needs the aid of no confed'rate pow'r.

Under the Article of the confounding we ranl

1. The MIXTURE OF FIGURES,

which raiſes ſo many images, as to give you image at all. But its principal beauty is, when gives an idea juſt oppoſite to what it ſeemed mea to deſcribe. Thus an ingenious artiſt, painting t ſpring, talks of a ſnow of bloſſoms, and there raiſes an unexpected picture of winter. Of tl ſort is the following:

† The gaping clouds pour lakes of ſulphur down,
Whoſe livid flaſhes ſickning ſunbeams drown.

What a noble confuſion? clouds, lakes, brimſtoı flames, ſun-beams, gaping, pouring, ſicknir drowning! all in two lines.

2. The JARGON.

‡ Thy head ſhall riſe, tho' buried in the duſt,
And 'midſt the clouds his glittering turrets thruſt.

* Black. Iſa. c. xl. † Pr. Arthur, p. 37. ‡ Job, p. 10

Quæ

Quære, What are the glittering turrets of a man's head?

* Upon the ſhore; as frequent as the ſand,
To meet the prince, the glad Dimetians ſtand.

Quære, Where theſe Dimetians ſtood? and of what ſize they were? add alſo to the jargon ſuch as the following:

† Deſtruction's empire ſhall no longer laſt,
And deſolation lie for ever waſte:
‡ Here Niobe, ſad mother, makes her moan,
And ſeems converted to a ſtone in ſtone.

But for variegation, nothing is more uſeful than

3. The PARANOMASIA, or PUN,

where a word, like the tongue of a jack-daw, ſpeaks twice as much by being ſplit: as this of Mr. Dennis,

§ Bullets, that wound, like Parthians as they fly:

or this excellent one of Mr. Welſted,

‖ ——— Behold the virgin lye
Naked, and only cover'd by the ſky.

To which thou may'ſt add,

To ſee her beauties no man needs to ſtoop,
She has the whole horizon for her hoop.

* Prince Arthur, p. 157.
† Job, p. 89.
‡ T. Cook, poems.
§ Poems 1693, p. 13.
‖ Welſted, poems, Acon & Lavin.

4. The ANTITHESIS, or SEE-SAW,

whereby contraries and oppoſitions are balanced in ſuch a way, as to cauſe a reader to remain ſuſpended between them, to his exceeding delight and recreation. Such are theſe on a lady, who made herſelf appear out of ſize, by hiding a young princeſs under her cloaths.

* While the kind nymph, changing her faultleſs ſhape,
Becomes unhandſome, handſomely to ſcape.

On the maids of honour in mourning.

† Sadly they charm, and diſmally they pleaſe.
‡ —— His eyes ſo bright
Let in the object and let out the light.
§ The Gods look pale to ſee us look ſo red.
———— The ‖ Fairies and their queen,
In mantles blue came tripping o'er the green.
¶ All nature felt a reverential ſhock,
The ſea ſtood ſtill to ſee the mountains rock.

CHAP. XI.

The figures continued: of the magnifying and diminiſhing figures.

A Genuine writer of the profund, will take care never to magnify any object without clouding it at the ſame time: his thought will appear in a true miſt, and very unlike what is in nature. It muſt always be remembered, that darkneſs is an

* Waller. † Steel, on Queen Mary. ‡ Quarles.
§ Lee, Alex. ‖ Phil. Paſt. ¶ Blackm. Job, p. 176.

eſſential

eſſential quality of the profund, or if there chance to be a glimmering, it muſt be, as Milton expreſſes it,

No light, but rather darkneſs viſible.

The chief figure of this ſort is,

The HYPERBOLE, or impoſſible.

For inſtance, of a Lion.

* He roar'd ſo loud, and look'd ſo wond'rous grim,
His very ſhadow durſt not follow him.

Of a Lady at Dinner.

The ſilver whiteneſs that adorns thy neck,
Sullies the plate, and makes the napkin black.

Of the ſame.

——The † obſcureneſs of her birth
Cannot eclipſe the luſtre of her eyes,
Which make her all one light.

Of a Bull-baiting.

‡ Up to the ſtars the ſprawling maſtives fly,
And add new monſters to the frighted ſky §.

Of a Scene of Miſery.

‖ Behold a ſcene of miſery and woe!
Here Argus ſoon might weep himſelf quite blind,
Ev'n tho' he had Briareus' hundred hands
To wipe his hundred eyes——

* Vet. Aut. † Theob. Double Falſhood. ‡ Blackm.
§ See p. 115. ‖ Anon.

And that modeſt requeſt of two abſent lovers;
Ye gods! annihilate but ſpace and time,
And make two lovers happy.

3. The PERIPHRASIS, which the moderns call the circumbendibus, whereof we have given examples in the ninth chapter, and ſhall again in the twelfth.

To the ſame claſs of the magnifying may be referred the following, which are ſo excellently modern, that we have yet no name for them. In deſcribing a country proſpect,

* I'd call them mountains, but can't call them ſo,
For fear to wrong them with a name too low;
While the fair vales beneath ſo humbly lie,
That even humble ſeems a term too high.

III. The laſt claſs remains; of the diminiſhing 1. the ANTICLIMAX, and figures: where the ſecond line drops quite ſhort of the firſt, than which nothing creates greater ſurprize.

On the Extent of the Britiſh Arms.

† Under the tropicks is our language ſpoke,
And part of Flanders hath receiv'd our yoke.

On a Warrior.

‡ And thou Dalhouſſy the great God of war,
Lieutenant colonel to the earl of Mar.

On the Valour of the Engliſh.

‖ Nor art nor nature has the force
To ſtop its ſteddy courſe,

* Anon. † Anon. ‡ Anon. ‖ Denn. on Namur.

Nor

Nor Alps nor Pyrenæans keep it out
——Nor fortify'd redoubt.

At other times this figure operates in a larger extent; and when the gentle reader is in expectation of ſome great image, he either finds it ſurpriſingly imperfect, or is preſented with ſomething low, or quite ridiculous: a ſurpriſe reſembling that of a curious perſon in a cabinet of antique ſtatues, who beholds on the pedeſtal the names of Homer, or Cato; but looking up finds Homer without a head, and nothing to be ſeen of Cato but his privy member. Such are theſe lines of a leviathan at ſea;

* His motion works, and beats the oozy mud,
And with its ſlime incorporates the flood,
'Till all th' incumber'd, thick, fermenting ſtream
Does like one pot of boiling ointment ſeem.
Where'er he ſwims, he leaves along the lake
Such frothy furrows, ſuch a foamy track,
That all the waters of the deep appear
Hoary——with age, or grey with ſudden fear.

But perhaps even theſe are excelled by the enſuing.

† Now the reſiſted flames and fiery ſtore,
By winds aſſaulted, in wide forges roar,
And raging ſeas flow down of melted ore,
Sometimes they hear long iron bars remov'd,
And to and fro huge heaps of cynders ſhov'd.

* Blackm. Job, p. 197. † Pr. Arthur, p. 157.

2. The VULGAR

is alſo a ſpecies of the diminishing: by this a ſpear flying into the air is compared to a boy whiſtling as he goes on an errand.

* The mighty Stuffa threw a maſſy ſpear,
Which, with its errand pleas'd, ſung through the air.

A man raging with grief to a maſtiff dog.

† I cannot ſtifle this gigantic woe,
Nor on my raging grief a muzzle throw.

And clouds big with water to a woman in great neceſſity.

Diſtended with the waters in 'em pent,
The clouds hang deep in air, but hang unrent.

3. The INFANTINE.

This is, when a poet grows ſo very ſimple, as to think and talk like a child. I ſhall take my examples from the greateſt maſter in this way: hear how he fondles like a mere ſtammerer.

‡ Little charm of placid mien,
Miniature of beauty's queen,
Hither Britiſh muſe of mine,
Hither, all ye Grecian nine,
With the lovely graces three,
And your pretty nurſeling ſee.

When the meadows next are ſeen,
Sweet enamel, white and green,

* Pr. Arthur. † Job, p. 41.
‡ Amb. Philips on Miſs Cuzzone.

When again the lambkins play,
Pretty ſportlings full of May,

Then the neck ſo white and round,
(Little neck with brilliants bound)

And thy gentleneſs of mind,
(Gentle from a gentle kind) &c.

Happy thrice, and thrice again,
Happieſt he of happy men, &c.

and the reſt of thoſe excellent lullabies of his compoſition.

How prettily he aſks the ſheep to teach him to bleat?

† Teach me to grieve with bleating moan, my ſheep.

Hear how a babe would reaſon on his nurſe's death.

‡ That ever ſhe could die! Oh moſt unkind!
To die, and leave poor Colinet behind!
And yet,——why blame I her?

With no leſs ſimplicity does he ſuppoſe, that ſhepherdeſſes tear their hair and beat their breaſts at their own deaths:

§ Ye brighter maids, faint emblems of my fair,
With looks caſt down, and with diſhevel'd hair,
In bitter anguiſh beat your breaſts, and moan
Her death untimely, as it were your own.

4. The INANITY, or NOTHINGNESS.

Of this the ſame author furniſhes us with moſt beautiful inſtances.

† Philips's paſtorals. ‡ Ibid. § Ibid.

Ah

* Ah ſilly I, more ſilly than my ſheep,
(Which on the flow'ry plain I once did keep.)

† To the grave ſenate ſhe could counſel give,
(Which with aſtoniſhment they did receive.)

‡ He whom loud cannon could not terrify,
Falls from the grandeur of his majeſty.

§ Happy, merry as a king,
Sipping dew——you ſip and ſing.

Where you eaſily perceive the nothingneſs of every ſecond verſe.

‖ The noiſe returning with returning light,

What did it?

Diſpers'd the ſilence, and diſpell'd the night.

¶ The glories of proud London to ſurvey,
The ſun himſelf ſhall riſe——by break of day.

5. The EXPLETIVE,

admirably exemplified in the epithets of many authors.

Th' umbrageous ſhadow, and the verdant green,
The running current, and odorous fragrance,
Chear my lone ſolitude with joyous gladneſs.

Or in pretty drawling words like theſe,

** All men his tomb, all men his ſons adore,
And his ſons ſons, till there ſhall be no more.

The riſing ſun our grief did ſee,
The ſetting ſun did ſee the ſame;

* Philips's Paſtorals. † Phil. on Q. Mary. ‡ Ibid.
§ T. Cook, on a graſhopper. ‖ Anon. ¶ Autor Vet.
** T. Cook, Poems.

While

While wretched we remembered thee,
* O Sion, Sion, lovely name.

6. The MACROLOGY and PLEONASM.

are as generally coupled, as a lean rabbit with a fat one; nor is it a wonder, the ſuperfluity of words, and vacuity of ſenſe, being juſt the ſame thing. I am pleaſed to ſee one of our greateſt adverſaries employ this figure.

† The growth of meadows, and the pride of fields,
The food of armies, and ſupport of wars,
Refuſe of ſwords, and gleanings of a fight,
Leſſen his numbers and contract his hoſt.
Where'er his friends retire, or foes ſucceed,
Cover'd with tempeſts, and in oceans drown'd.

Of all which the perfection is

The TAUTOLOGY.

‡ Break through the billows, and—divide the main.
In ſmoother numbers, and—in ſofter verſe.
§ Divide—and part—the ſever'd world—in two.

With ten thouſand others equally muſical, and plentifully flowing through moſt of our celebrated modern poems.

* T. Cook, Poems. vol. iv. p. 291. 4th edit.
† Camp.
‡ Tonſ. Miſc. 12°
§ Ibid. vol. vi. p. 121.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Of expreſſion, and the ſeveral ſorts of ſtyle of the preſent age.

THE expreſſion is adequate, when it is proportionably low to the profundity of the thought. It muſt not be always grammatical, leſt it appear pedantic and ungentlemanly; nor too clear, for fear it become vulgar; for obſcurity beſtows a caſt of the wonderful, and throws an oracular dignity upon a piece which hath no meaning.

For example, ſometimes uſe the wrong number; the ſword and peſtilence at once devours, inſtead of devour. * Sometimes the wrong caſe; and who more fit to ſooth the god than thee? inſtead of thou. And rather than ſay, Thetis ſaw Achilles weep, ſhe heard him weep.

We muſt be exceeding careful in two things; firſt, in the choice of low words: ſecondly, in the ſober and orderly way of ranging them. Many of our poets are naturally bleſſed with this talent, inſomuch that they are in the circumſtance of that honeſt citizen, who had made proſe all his life without knowing it. Let verſes run in this manner, juſt to be a vehicle to the words; I take them from my laſt-cited author, who though otherwiſe by no means of our rank, ſeemed once in his life to have a mind to be ſimple.

† If not, a prize I will myſelf decree,
From him, or him, or elſe perhaps from thee.

* Ti. Hom. Il. i. † Ibid. p. 11.

——full

* ——full of days was he;
Two ages paſt, he liv'd the third to ſee.

† The king of forty kings, and honour'd more
By mighty Jove, than e'er was king before.

‡ That I may know, if thou my pray'r deny,
The moſt deſpis'd of all the gods am I.

§ Then let my mother once be rul'd by me,
Though much more wiſe than I pretend to be.

Or theſe, of the ſame hand:

‖ I leave the arts of poetry and verſe
To them that practiſe them with more ſucceſs.
Of greater truths I now prepare to tell,
And ſo at once, dear friend and muſe, farewel.

Sometimes a ſingle word will vulgarize a poetical idea; as where a ſhip ſet on fire owes all the ſpirit of the bathos to one choice word, that ends the line.

¶ And his ſcorch'd ribs the hot contagion fry'd.

And in that deſcription of a world in ruins:

** Should the whole frame of nature round him break,
He, unconcern'd, would hear the mighty crack.

So alſo in theſe,

†† Beaſts tame and ſavage to the river's brink
Come from the fields and wild abodes—to drink.

* Ti. Hom. Il. i. p. 17. † P. 19. ‡ P. 34. § P. 38. ‖ Tonſ. Miſc. 12° vol. iv. p. 292. fourth edit. ¶ Tonſ. Miſc. vol. vi. p. 119. ** Job, p. 263. †† Pr. Arthur, p. 151.

Fre-

Frequently two or three words will do it effectually,

* He from the clouds does the ſweet liquor ſqueeze,
That chears the foreſt and the garden trees.

It is alſo uſeful to employ technical terms, which eſtrange your ſtyle from the great and general ideas of nature: and the higher your ſubject is, the lower ſhould you ſearch into mechanics for your expreſſion. If you deſcribe the garment of an angel, ſay that his † linen was finely ſpun, and bleached on the happy plains. ‡ Call an army of angels, angelic cuiraſſiers; and if you have occaſion to mention a number of misfortunes, ſtyle them

§ Freſh troops of pains, and regimented woes.

STYLE is divided by the rhetoricians into the proper and the figured. Of the figured we have already treated, and the proper is what our authors have nothing to do with. Of ſtyles we ſhall mention only the principal, which owe to the moderns either their chief improvement, or entire invention.

1. The FLORID STYLE.

Than which none is more proper to the bathos, as flowers, which are the loweſt of vegetables, are moſt gaudy, and do many times grow in great plenty at the bottom of ponds and ditches.

A fine writer of this kind preſents you with the following poſie:

* Id. Job, p. 264. † Pr. Arthur, p. 19. ‡ Ibid. p. 339.
§ Job, p. 86.

The

* The groves appear all dreſt with wreaths of flowers,
And from their leaves drop aromatic ſhowers;
Whoſe fragrant heads in myſtic twines above,
Exchang'd their ſweets, and mix'd with thouſand kiſſes,
As if the willing branches ſtrove,
To beautify and ſhade the grove.

which indeed moſt branches do. But this is ſtill excelled by our laureate:

† Branches in branches twin'd compoſe the grove,
And ſhoot and ſpread, and bloſſom into love.
The trembling palms their mutual vows repeat,
And bending poplars bending poplars meet.
The diſtant plantanes ſeem to preſs more nigh,
And to the ſighing alders, alders ſigh.

Hear alſo our Homer.

‡ His robe of ſtate is form'd of light refin'd,
An endleſs train of luſtre ſpreads behind.
His throne's of bright compacted glory made,
With pearls celeſtial, and with gems inlaid:
Whence floods of joy, and ſeas of ſplendor flow,
On all the angelic gazing throng below.

2. The PERT STYLE.

This does in as peculiar a manner become the low in wit, as a pert air does the low in ſtature. Mr. Thomas Brown, the author of the London Spy, and all the ſpies and trips in general, are herein to be diligently ſtudied; in verſe, Mr. Cibber's prologues.

* Behn's poems, p. 2. † Guardian, 12°, 127.
‡ Blackm. Pſ. civ.

But

But the beauty and energy of it is never ſo conſpicuous, as when it is employed in modernizing, and adapting to the taſte of the times, the works of the antients. This we rightly phraſe, doing them into Engliſh, and making them Engliſh; two expreſſions of great propriety; the one, denoting our neglect of the manner how; the other, the force and compulſion with which it is brought about. It is by virtue of this ſtyle, that Tacitus talks like a coffee-houſe politician, Joſephus * like the Britiſh gazetteer, Tully is as ſhort and ſmart as Seneca or Mr. Aſgill, Marcus Aurelius is excellent at ſnip-ſnap, and honeſt Thomas-a-Kempis as prim and polite as any preacher at court.

3. The ALAMODE STYLE,

which is fine by being new, and has this happineſs attending it, that it is as durable and extenſive as the poem itſelf. Take ſome examples of it, in the deſcription of the ſun in a mourning coach upon the death of Queen Mary.

† See Phœbus now, as once for Phaeton,
Has maſk'd his face; and put deep mourning on;
Dark clouds his ſable chariot do ſurround,
And the dull ſteeds ſtalk o'er the melancholy round.

Of Prince Arthur's ſoldiers drinking.

‡ While rich burgundian wine, and bright champaign,
Chaſe from their minds the terrors of the main.

* Joſephus, tranſlated by Sir Roger L'Eſtrange. † Amb. Philips. ‡ Pr. Arthur, p. 16.

whence

whence we alſo learn, that burgundy and champaign make a man on ſhore deſpiſe a ſtorm at ſea.

Of the Almighty encamping his regiments.

* ——He ſunk a vaſt capacious deep,
Where he his liquid regiments does keep.
Thither the waves file off, and make their way
To form the mighty body of the ſea;
Where they encamp, and in their ſtation ſtand,
Entrench'd in works of rock, and lines of ſand.

Of two armies on the point of engaging.

† Yon' armies are the cards which both muſt play;
At leaſt come off a ſaver, if you may:
Throw boldly at the ſum the gods have ſet;
Theſe on your ſide will all their fortunes bet.

All perfectly agreeable to the preſent cuſtoms and beſt faſhions of our metropolis.

But the principal branch of the alamode, is the PRURIENT; a ſtyle greatly advanced and honoured of late by the practice of perſons of the firſt quality; and, by the encouragement of the ladies, not unſucceſsfully introduced even into the drawing-room. Indeed its incredible progreſs and conqueſts may be compared to thoſe of the great Seſoſtris, and are every where known by the ſame marks, the images of the genital parts of men or women. It conſiſts wholly of metaphors drawn from two moſt fruitful ſources or ſprings, the very bathos of the human body, that is to ſay * * *

* Blackm. Pſ. civ. p. 261. † Lee, Sophon.

and * * * * * *hiatus magnus lachrymabilis* * * * * And ſelling of bargains, and double entendre, and Κιββέρισμος and Ὀλδφειλδισμος, all derived from the ſaid ſources.

4. The FINICAL STYLE,

which conſiſts of the moſt curious, affected, mincing metaphors, and partakers of the alamode: as the following:

Of a brook dried by the ſun.

* Won by the ſummer's importuning ray,
Th' eloping ſtream did from her channel ſtray,
And with enticing ſun-beams ſtole away.

Of an eaſy death.

† When watchful death ſhall on his harveſt look,
And ſee thee, ripe with age, invite the hook;
He'll gently cut thy bending ſtalk, and thee
Lay kindly in the grave, his granary.

Of trees in a ſtorm.

‡ Oaks, whoſe extended arms the winds defy,
The tempeſt ſees their ſtrength, and ſighs, and paſſes by.

Of water ſimmering over the fire.

§ The ſparkling flames raiſe water to a ſmile,
Yet the pleas'd liquor pines, and leſſens all the while.

5. LASTLY, I ſhall place the CUMBROUS, which moves heavily under a load of metaphors, and

* Blackm. Job, p. 26. † Ibid. p. 23. ‡ Dean.
§ Anon. Tonſ. Miſc. Part 6. p. 224.

draws

draws after it a long train of words: and the BUSKIN, or ſtately, frequently and with great felicity mixed with the former. For, as the firſt is the proper engine to depreſs what is high, ſo is the ſecond to raiſe what is baſe and low to a ridiculous viſibility. When both theſe can be done at once, then is the bathos in perfection; as when a man is ſet with his head downward and his breech upright, his degradation is complete: one end of him is as high as ever, only that end is the wrong one. Will not every true lover of the profund, be delighted to behold the moſt vulgar and low actions of life, exalted in the following manner?

Who knocks at the door?

For whom thus rudely pleads my loud-tongu'd gate,
That he may enter?

See who is there?

* Advance the fringed curtains of thy eyes,
And tell me who comes yonder.

Shut the door.

The wooden guardian of our privacy
Quick on its axle turn.

Bring my cloaths.

Bring me what nature, taylor to the bear,
To man himſelf deny'd; ſhe gave me cold,
But would not give me cloaths.

* Temp.

Light the fire.

Bring forth ſome remnant of Promethean theft,
Quick to expand th' inclement air, congeal'd
By Boreas's rude breath.

Snuff the candle.

Yon' luminary amputation needs,
Thus ſhall you ſave its half-extinguiſh'd life.

Open the letter.

* Wax! render up thy truſt.

Uncork the bottle, and chip the bread.

Apply thine engine to the ſpungy door:
Set Bacchus from his glaſſy priſon free,
And ſtrip white Ceres of her nut-brown coat.

CHAP. XIII.

A project for the advancement of the bathos.

THUS have I (my dear countrymen) with incredible pains and diligence diſcovered the hidden ſources of the bathos, or, as I may ſay, broke open the abyſſes of this great deep. And having now eſtabliſhed good and wholeſome laws, what remains, but that all true moderns with their utmoſt might do proceed to put the ſame in execution? in order whereto, I think I ſhall, in the ſecond place, highly deſerve of my country, by

* Theob. Double Falſhood.

propoſing

propoſing ſuch a ſcheme, as may facilitate this great end.

As our number is confeſſedly far ſuperior to that of the enemy, there ſeems nothing wanting but unanimity among ourſelves. It is therefore humbly offered, that all, and every individual of the bathos, do enter into a firm aſſociation, and incorporate into one regular body, whereof every member, even the meaneſt, will ſome way contribute to the ſupport of the whole; in like manner, as the weakeſt reeds, when joined in one bundle, become infrangible. To which end, our art ought to be put upon the ſame foot with other arts of this age. The vaſt improvement of modern manufactures, ariſeth from their being divided into ſeveral branches, and parcelled out to ſeveral trades: for inſtance, in clock-making one artiſt makes the balance, another the ſpring, another the crown-wheels, a fourth the caſe, and the principal workman puts all together; to this œconomy we owe the perfection of our modern watches, and doubtleſs we alſo might that of our modern poetry and rhetoric, were the ſeveral parts branched out in the like manner.

Nothing is more evident than that divers perſons, no other way remarkable, have each a ſtrong diſpoſition to the formation of ſome particular trope or figure. Ariſtotle ſaith, that "the hyperbole is "an ornament fit for young men of quality;" accordingly we find in thoſe gentlemen a wonderful propenſity toward it, which is marvellouſly improved by travelling. Soldiers alſo and ſeamen are

very happy in the ſame figure. The periphraſis, or circumlocution, is the peculiar talent of country farmers; the proverb and apologue, of old men at clubs; the ellipſis, or ſpeech by half-words, of miniſters and politicians; the apoſiopeſis of courtiers; the litotes, or diminution, of ladies, whiſperers, and backbiters; and the anadiploſis of common criers and hawkers, who by redoubling the ſame words perſuade people to buy their oyſters, green haſtings, or new ballads. Epithets may be found in great plenty at Billingſgate; ſarcaſm and irony learned upon the water; and the epiphonema, or exclamation, frequently from the bear-garden, and as frequently from the hear him of the houſe of commons.

Now each man applying his whole time and genius upon his particular figure, would doubtleſs attain to perfection; and when each became incorporated and ſworn into the ſociety (as hath been propoſed) a poet or orator would have no more to do, but to ſend to the particular traders in each kind; to the metaphoriſt, for his allegories; to the ſimile-maker, for his compariſons; to the ironiſt, for his ſarcaſms; to the apothegmatiſt for his ſentences, &c. whereby a dedication or ſpeech would be compoſed in a moment, the ſuperior artiſt having nothing to do but to put together all the materials.

I therefore propoſe, that there be contrived with all convenient diſpatch, at the public expence, a rhetorical cheſt of drawers conſiſting of three ſtories; the higheſt for the deliberative, the middle for the

the demonſtrative, and the loweſt for the judicial. Theſe ſhall be divided into *loci* or places, being repoſitories for matter and argument in the ſeveral kinds of oration or writing; and every drawer ſhall again be ſubdivided into cells, reſembling thoſe of cabinets for rarities. The apartment for peace or war, and that of the liberty of the preſs, may in a very few days be filled with ſeveral arguments perfectly new; and the vituperative partition will as eaſily be repleniſhed with a moſt choice collection, entirely of the growth and manufacture of the preſent age. Every compoſer will ſoon be taught the uſe of this cabinet, and how to manage all the regiſters of it, which will be drawn out much in the manner of thoſe in an organ.

The keys of it muſt be kept in honeſt hands, by ſome reverend prelate, or valiant officer, of unqueſtioned loyalty and affection to every preſent eſtabliſhment in church and ſtate; which will ſufficiently guard againſt any miſchief, that might otherwiſe be apprehended from it.

And being lodged in ſuch hands, it may be at diſcretion let out by the day to ſeveral great orators in both houſes: from whence it is to be hoped much profit and gain will alſo accrue to our ſociety.

CHAP. XIV.

How to make dedications, panegyrics or ſatires, and of the colours of honourable and diſhonourable.

NOW of what neceſſity the foregoing project may prove, will appear from this ſingle conſideration, that nothing is of equal conſequence to the ſucceſs of our works, as ſpeed and diſpatch. Great pity it is that ſolid brains are not like other ſolid bodies, conſtantly endowed with a velocity in ſinking proportioned to their heavineſs: for it is with the flowers of the bathos, as with thoſe of nature, which if the careful gardener brings not haſtily to market in the morning, muſt unprofitably periſh and wither before night. And of all our productions none is ſo ſhort-lived as the dedication and panegyric, which are often but the praiſe of a day, and become by the next utterly uſeleſs, improper, indecent, and falſe. This is the more to be lamented, inaſmuch as theſe two are the ſorts, whereon in a manner depends that profit, which muſt ſtill be remembered to be the main end of our writers and ſpeakers.

We ſhall therefore employ this chapter in ſhewing the quickeſt method of compoſing them; after which we will teach a ſhort way to epic poetry. And theſe being confeſſedly the works of moſt importance and difficulty, it is preſumed we may leave the reſt to each author's own learning or practice.

Firſt

Firſt of panegyric. Every man is honourable, who is ſo by law, cuſtom, or title. The public are better judges of what is honourable, than private men. The virtues of great men, like thoſe of plants, are inherent in them whether they are exerted or not; and the more ſtrongly inherent, the leſs they are exerted; as a man is the more rich, the leſs he ſpends. All great miniſters, without either private or œconomical virtue, are virtuous by their poſts; liberal and generous upon the public money, provident upon public ſupplies, juſt by paying public intereſt, courageous and magnanimous by the fleets and armies, magnificent upon the public expences, and prudent by public ſucceſs. They have by their office a right to a ſhare of the public ſtock of virtues; beſides, they are by preſcription immemorial inveſted in all the celebrated virtues of their predeceſſors in the ſame ſtations, eſpecially thoſe of their own anceſtors.

As to what are commonly called the colours of honourable and diſhonourable, they are various in different countries: in this they are blue, green, and red.

But, foraſmuch as the duty we owe to the public doth often require, that we ſhould put ſome things in a ſtrong light, and throw a ſhade over others, I ſhall explain the method of turning a vicious man into a hero.

The firſt and chief rule is the golden rule of transformation, which conſiſts in converting vices into their bordering virtues. A man who is a ſpend-thrift, and will not pay a juſt debt, may

have

have his injuſtice tranformed into liberality; cowardice may be metamorphoſed into prudence; intemperance into good nature and good fellowſhip; corruption into patriotiſm; and lewdneſs into tenderneſs and facility.

The ſecond is the rule of contraries: it is certain, the leſs a man is indued with any virtue, the more need he has to have it plentifully beſtowed; eſpecially thoſe good qualities, of which the world generally believes he hath none at all: for who will thank a man for giving him that which he has?

The reverſe of theſe precepts will ſerve for ſatire; wherein we are ever to remark, that whoſo loſes his place, or becomes out of favour with the government, hath forfeited his ſhare in public praiſe and honour. Therefore the truly public-ſpirited writer ought in duty to ſtrip him, whom the government hath ſtripped; which is the real poetical juſtice of this age. For a full collection of topicks and epithets to be uſed in the praiſe and diſpraiſe of miniſterial and unminiſterial perſons, I refer to our rhetorical cabinet; concluding with an earneſt exhortation to all my brethren, to obſerve the precepts here laid down, the neglect of which hath coſt ſome of them their ears in a pillory.

CHAP. XV.

A receipt to make an epic poem.

AN epic poem, the critics agree, is the greateſt work human nature is capable of. They have already laid down many mechanical rules for compoſitions

compoſitions of this ſort, but at the ſame time they cut off almoſt all undertakers from the poſſibility of ever performing them; for the firſt qualification they unanimouſly require in a poet, is a genius. I ſhall here endeavour (for the benefit of my countrymen) to make it manifeſt, that epic poems may be made without a genius, nay without learning or much reading. This muſt neceſſarily be of great uſe to all thoſe, who confeſs they never read, and of whom the world is convinced they never learn. Moliere obſerves of making a dinner, that any man can do it with money, and if a profeſſed cook cannot do it without, he has his art for nothing: the ſame may be ſaid of making a poem, it is eaſily brought about by him that has a genius, but the ſkill lies in doing it without one. In purſuance of this end, I ſhall preſent the reader with a plain and certain recipe, by which any author in the bathos may be qualified for this grand performance.

For the FABLE.

Take out of any old poem, hiſtory-book, romance, or legend (for inſtance, Geoffrey of Monmouth or Don Belianis of Greece) thoſe parts of the ſtory which afford moſt ſcope for long deſcriptions: put theſe pieces together, and throw all the adventures you fancy into one tale. Then take a hero, whom you may chooſe for the ſound of his name, and put him into the midſt of theſe adventures: there let him work for twelve books; at the end of which you may take him out, ready prepared to conquer or to marry: it being neceſſary that the concluſion of an epic poem be fortunate.

To

To make an EPISODE.

Take any remaining adventure of your former collection, in which you could no way involve your hero: or any unfortunate accident, that was too good to be thrown away; and it will be of uſe, applied to any other perſon, who may be loſt and evaporate in the courſe of the work, without the leaſt damage to the compoſition.

For the MORAL and ALLEGORY.

Theſe you may extract out of the fable afterwards, at your leiſure: be ſure you ſtrain them ſufficiently.

For the MANNERS.

For thoſe of the hero, take all the beſt qualities you can find in the moſt celebrated heroes of antiquity: if they will not be reduced to a conſiſtency, lay them all on a heap upon him. But be ſure they are qualities, which your patron would be thought to have; and to prevent any miſtake, which the world may be ſubject to, ſelect from the alphabet thoſe capital letters that compoſe his name, and ſet them at the head of a dedication before your poem. However, do not abſolutely obſerve the exact quantity of theſe virtues, it not being determined whether or not it be neceſſary for the hero of a poem to be an honeſt man. For the under characters, gather them from Homer and Virgil, and change the names as occaſion ſerves.

For the MACHINES.

Take of deities, male and female, as many as you can uſe: ſeparate them into two equal parts, and keep Jupiter in the middle; let Juno put him in a ferment, and Venus mollify him. Remember on all occaſions to make uſe of volatile Mercury. If you have need of devils, draw them out of Milton's Paradiſe, and extract your ſpirits from Taſſo. The uſe of theſe machines is evident; ſince no epic poem can poſſibly ſubſiſt without them, the wiſeſt way is to reſerve them for your greateſt neceſſities: when you cannot extricate your hero by any human means, or yourſelf by your own wit, ſeek relief from heaven, and the Gods will do your buſineſs very readily. This is according to the direct preſcription of Horace in his art of poetry.

Nec deus interſit, niſi dignus vindice nodus
Inciderit.

That is to ſay, a poet ſhould never call upon the Gods for their aſſiſtance, but when he is in great perplexity.

For the DESCRIPTIONS.

For a tempeſt. Take eurus, zephyr, auſter and boreas, and caſt them together in one verſe: add to theſe of rain, lightning and thunder (the loudeſt you can) *quantum ſufficit*. Mix your clouds and billows well together till they foam, and thicken your deſcription here and there with a quick-ſand. Brew your tempeſt well in your head, before you ſet it a blowing.

For

For a battle. Pick a large quantity of images and deſcriptions from Homer's Iliad, with a ſpice or two of Virgil, and if there remain any overplus, you may lay them by for a ſkirmiſh. Seaſon it well with ſimiles, and it will make an excellent battle.

For a burning town. If ſuch a deſcription be neceſſary (becauſe it is certain there is one in Virgil) old Troy is ready burnt to your hands. But if you fear that would be thought borrowed, a chapter or two of Burnet's theory of the conflagration, well circumſtanced and done into verſe, will be a good ſuccedaneum.

As for ſimiles and metaphors, they may be found all over the creation; the moſt ignorant may gather them, but the difficulty is in applying them. For this adviſe with your bookſeller.

CHAP. XVI.

A project for the advancement of the ſtage.

IT may be thought that we ſhould not wholly omit the drama, which makes ſo great and ſo lucrative a part of poetry. But this province is ſo well taken care of by the preſent managers of the theatre, that it is perfectly needleſs to ſuggeſt to them any other methods than they have already practiſed for the advancement of the bathos.

Here therefore, in the name of all our brethren, let me return our ſincere and humble thanks to the moſt auguſt Mr. Barton Booth, the moſt ſerene Mr. Robert Wilks, and the moſt undaunted Mr. Colley

Colley Cibber; of whom let it be known, when the people of this age ſhall be anceſtors, and to all the ſucceſſion of our ſucceſſors, that to this preſent day they continue to out-do even their own out-doings; and when the inevitable hand of ſweeping time ſhall have bruſhed off all the works of to-day, may this teſtimony of a contemporary critic to their fame be extended as far as to-morrow.

Yet if to ſo wiſe an adminiſtration it be poſſible any thing can be added, it is that more ample and comprehenſive ſcheme which Mr. Dennis and Mr. Gildon (the two greateſt critics and reformers then living) made public in the year 1720, in a project ſigned with their names, and dated the 2d of February. I cannot better conclude than by preſenting the reader with the ſubſtance of it.

1. It is propoſed, that the two theatres be incorporated into one company; that the royal academy of muſick be added to them as an orcheſtra; and that Mr. Figg with his prize-fighters, and Violante with the rope-dancers, be admitted in partnerſhip.

2. That a ſpacious building be erected at the public expence, capable of containing at leaſt ten thouſand ſpectators; which is become abſolutely neceſſary by the great addition of children and nurſes to the audience, ſince the new entertainments. * That there be a ſtage as large as the Athenian, which was near ninety thouſand geometrical paces ſquare, and ſeparate diviſions for the two houſes of parliament, my lords the judges, the honourable

* Pantomimes were then firſt exhibited in England.

the directors of the academy, and the court of aldermen, who ſhall all have their places frank.

3. If Weſtminſter-hall be not allotted to this ſervice (which by reaſon of its proximity to the two chambers of parliament above mentioned ſeems not altogether improper) it is left to the wiſdom of the nation whether Somerſet-houſe may not be demoliſhed, and a theatre built upon that ſite, which lies convenient to receive ſpectators from the county of Surrey, who may be wafted thither by water-carriage, eſteemed by all projectors the cheapeſt whatſoever. To this may be added, that the river Thames may in the readieſt manner convey thoſe eminent perſonages from courts beyond the ſeas, who may be drawn either by curioſity to behold ſome of our moſt celebrated pieces, or by affection to ſee their countrymen, the harlequins and eunuchs; of which convenient notice may be given, for two or three months before, in the public prints.

4. That the theatre aboveſaid be environed with a fair quadrangle of buildings, fitted for the accommodation of decayed critics and poets; out of whom ſix of the moſt aged (their age to be computed from the year wherein their firſt work was publiſhed) ſhall be elected to manage the affairs of the ſociety, provided nevertheleſs that the laureat for the time being may be always one. The head or preſident over all (to prevent diſputes, but too frequent among the learned) ſhall be the moſt ancient poet and critic to be found in the whole iſland.

5. The

5. The male-players are to be lodged in the garrets of the ſaid quadrangle, and to attend the perſons of the poets dwelling under them, by bruſhing their apparel, drawing on their ſhoes, and the like. The actreſſes are to make their beds and waſh their linen.

6. A large room ſhall be ſet apart for a library, to conſiſt of all the modern dramatick poems, and all the criticiſms extant. In the midſt of this room ſhall be a round table for the council of ſix to ſit and deliberate on the merits of plays. The majority ſhall determine the diſpute; and if it ſhould happen, that three and three ſhould be of each ſide, the preſident ſhall have a caſting voice, unleſs where the contention may run ſo high as to require a deciſion by ſingle combat.

7. It may be convenient to place the council of ſix in ſome conſpicuous ſituation in the theatre, where, after the manner uſually practiſed by compoſers in muſick, they may give ſigns (before ſettled and agreed upon) of diſlike or approbation. In conſequence of theſe ſigns the whole audience ſhall be required to clap or hiſs, that the town may learn certainly, when and how far they ought to be pleaſed.

8. It is ſubmitted, whether it would not be proper to diſtinguiſh the council of ſix by ſome particular habit or gown of an honourable ſhape and colour, to which may be added a ſquare cap and a white wand.

9. That to prevent unmarried actreſſes mak ng away with their infants, a competent proviſion be al-

lowed for the nurture of them, who ſhall for that reaſon be deemed the children of the ſociety; and that they may be educated according to the genius of their parents, the ſaid actreſſes ſhall declare upon oath (as far as their memory will allow) the true names and qualities of their ſeveral fathers. A private gentleman's ſon ſhall at the public expence be brought up a page to attend the council of ſix: a more ample proviſion ſhall be made for the ſon of a poet; and a greater ſtill for the ſon of a critic.

10. If it be diſcovered, that any actreſs is got with child during the interludes of any play, wherein ſhe hath a part, it ſhall be reckoned a neglect of her buſineſs, and ſhe ſhall forfeit accordingly. If any actor for the future ſhall commit murder, except upon the ſtage, he ſhall be left to the laws of the land; the like is to be underſtood of robbery and theft. In all other caſes, particularly in thoſe for debt, it is propoſed that this, like the other courts of Whitehall and St. James's, may be held a place of privilege. And whereas it has been found, that an obligation to ſatisfy paltry creditors has been a diſcouragement to men of letters, if any perſon of quality or others ſhall ſend for any poet or critic of this ſociety to any remote quarter of the town, the ſaid poet or critic ſhall freely paſs and repaſs, without being liable to an arreſt.

11. The forementioned ſcheme, in its ſeveral regulations, may be ſupported by profits ariſing from every third-night throughout the year. And as it would be hard to ſuppoſe, that ſo many perſons could live without any food (though from the former

mer courſe of their lives a very little will be deemed ſufficient) the maſters of calculation will, we believe, agree, that out of thoſe profits the ſaid perſons might be ſubſiſted in a ſober and decent manner. We will venture to affirm farther, that not only the proper magazines of thunder and lightning, but paint, diet-drinks, ſpitting pots, and all other neceſſaries of life, may in like manner fairly be provided for.

12. If ſome of the articles may at firſt view ſeem liable to objections, particularly thoſe that give ſo vaſt a power to the council of ſix (which is indeed larger than any entruſted to the great officers of ſtate) this may be obviated by ſwearing thoſe ſix perſons of his majeſty's privy council, and obliging them to paſs every thing of moment previouſly at that moſt honourable board.

CONTENTS

TO THE

ART OF SINKING IN POETRY.

Chap. I. INTRODUCTION Page 3

II. *That the bathos, or profund, is the natural taſte of man, and in particular of the preſent age* - - - - 6

III. *The neceſſity of the bathos, phyſically conſidered* - - - 8

IV. *That there is an art of the bathos or profund* 10

V. *Of the true genius for the profund, and by what it is conſtituted* - - 11

VI. *Of the ſeveral kinds of genius in the profund, and the marks and characters of each* 17

VII. *Of the profund, when it conſiſts in the thought* - - - 20

VIII. *Of the profund, conſiſting in the circumſtances; and of amplification and periphraſe in general* 23

IX. *Of imitation, and the manner of imitating* 27

X. *Of tropes and figures: and firſt of the variegating, confounding, and reverſing figures* 30

XI. *The figures continued: of the magnifying and diminiſhing figures* - - 36

XII. *Of expreſſion, and the ſeveral ſorts of ſtyle of the preſent age* - - 44

XIII. *A project for the advancement of the bathos* 52

XIV. *How to make dedications, panegyrics, or ſatyrs, and of the colours of honourable and diſhonourable* - - 56

XV. *A receipt to make an epic poem* 58

XVI. *A project for the advancement of the ſtage* 62

Virgilius Reſtauratus:

SEU

MARTINI SCRIBLERI

SUMMI CRITICI,

CASTIGATIONUM IN ÆNEIDEM

SPECIMEN.

ÆNEIDEM totam, amice lector, innumerabilibus pœne mendis ſcaturientem, ad priſtinum ſenſum revocabimus. In ſingulis fere verſibus ſpuriæ occurrunt lectiones, in omnibus quos unquam vidi codicibus, aut vulgatis aut ineditis, ad opprobrium uſque criticorum, in hunc diem exiſtentes. Interea adverte oculos, & his paucis fruere. At ſi quæ ſint in hiſce caſtigationibus de quibus non ſatis liquet, ſyllábarum quantitates, προλεγόμενα noſtra libro ipſi præfigenda, ut conſulas, moneo.

I. SPECIMEN LIBRI PRIMI, VER. I.

ARMA virumque cano, Trojæ qui primus ab *oris*
Italiam, *fato* profugus, *Lavinaque* venit
Litora. Multum ille & terris *jactatus* & alto,
Vi ſuperûm——

Arma virumque cano, Trójæ qui primus ab *aris*
Italiam, *flatu* profugus, *latinaque* venit
Littora. Multum ille & terris *vexatus*, & alto
Vi ſuperûm——

Ab *aris*, nempe *Hercæi Jovis*, vide lib. ii. ver. 512, 550.—*flatu* ventorum *Æoli*, ut ſequitur—*latina* certe littora cum *Æneas* aderat, *lavina* non niſi poſtea ab ipſo nominata, lib. xii. ver. 193.—*jactatus terris* non convenit.

II. Ver. 52.

Et quiſquis *numen Junonis* adoret?
Et quiſquis *nomen Junonis* adoret?

Longe meliùs, quam ut antea, *numen* & procul-dubio ſic Virgilius.

III. Ver. 86.

Venti, velut *agmine facto*,
Qua data porta ruunt——
Venti, velut *aggere fracto*,
Qua data porta ruunt——

Sic corrige, meo periculo.

IV. Ver. 117.

Fidumque vehebat *Orontem*.
Fortemque vehebat *Orontem*:

Non *fidum*, quia Epitheton *Achatæ* notiſſimum *Oronti* nunquam datur.

V. Ver. 119.

Excutitur, pronuſque *magiſter*
Volvitur in caput——

Excutitur:

Excutitur: pronuſque *magis tèr*
Volvitur in caput——

Aio Virgilium aliter non ſcripſiſſe, quod planè confirmatur ex ſequentibus—*Aſt illum* ter *fluctus ibidem torquet*——

VI. VER. 122.

Apparent rari nantes in gurgite vaſto
Arma virûm——

Armi hominum: ridicule antea *arma virûm*, quæ, ex ferro conflata, quo-modo poſſunt *natare?*

VII. VER. 151.

Atque rotis *ſummas* leviter perlabitur *undas.*

Atque rotis *ſpumas* leviter perlabitur *udas.*

Summas, & *leviter perlabi*, pleonaſmus eſt: mirifice altera lectio Neptuni agilitatem & celeritatem exprimit; ſimili modo noſter de Camilla, Æn. xi.

Illa vel intactæ ſegetis per ſumma volaret, &c. hyperbolice.

VIII. VER. 154.

Jamque *faces* & ſaxa volant, *furor arma miniſtrat.*
Jam *fæces* & ſaxa volant, *fugiuntque miniſtri*:
uti ſolent, inſtanti periculo—*Fæces facibus* longe præſtant, quid enim niſi fæces jactarent vulgus ſordidum?

IX. VER. 170.

Fronte ſub adverſa *ſcopulis pendentibus* antrum,
Intus aquæ dulces, vivoque ſedilia ſaxo.
Fronte ſub adverſa *populis prandentibus* antrum.

Sic malim, longe potius quam *ſcopulis pendentibus*: nugæ! nonne vides verſu ſequenti *dulces aquas* ad potandum & *ſedilia* ad diſcumbendum dari? in quorum uſum? quippe *prandentium*.

X. VER. 188.

Tres littore *cervos*
Proſpicit errantes: hos *tota armenta* ſequuntur
A tergo——
Tres littore *corvos*
Aſpicit errantes: hos *agmina tota* ſequuntur
A tergo——

Cervi, lectio vulgata, abſurditas notiſſima: hæc animalia in *Africa* non inventa, quis neſcit? at *motus* & *ambulandi ritus* corvorum, quis non agnovit hoc loco? *Littore*, locus ubi errant corvi, uti noſter alibi,

Et ſola in ſicca ſecum ſpatiatur arena.

Omen præclariſſimum, immo & *agminibus militum* frequenter obſervatum, ut patet ex hiſtoricis.

XI. VER. 748.

Arcturum, pluviaſque Hyades, *geminoſque Triones*.

Error graviſſimus. Corrigo,—*ſeptemque Triones*.

XII. VER. 631.

Quare agite, O juvenes, *tectis* ſuccedite noſtris.

Lectis potius dicebat Dido, polita magis oratione, & quæ unica voce & torum & menſam exprimebat: Hanc lectionem probe confirmat appellatio O *juvenes!* Duplicem hunc ſenſum alibi etiam Maro lepide innuit, Æn. iv. ver. 19.

Huic

Huic uni forſan potui ſuccumbere *culpæ*:
Anna! fatebor enim——
Sic corriges,
Huic uni [*viro* ſcil.] potui ſuccumbere *culpas*?
Anna? fatebor enim, *etc.*
Vox *ſuccumbere* quam eleganter ambigua!

LIBER SECUNDUS. VER. I.

CONTICUERE omnes, intentique ora tenebant,
Inde toro *pater* Æneas ſic orſus ab alto.
Concubuere omnes, *intentèque* ora tenebant;
Inde toro *ſatur* Æneas ſic orſus ab alto.

Concubuere, quia toro Æneam vidimus accumbentem: quin et altera ratio, ſcil. *conticuere* & *ora tenebant*, tautologice dictum. In manuſcripto perquam rariſſimo in patris muſeo, legitur, *ore gemebant*; ſed magis ingenioſe quam vere. *Satur* Æneas, quippe qui jamjam a prandio ſurrexit: *pater* nihil ad rem.

II. VER. 3.

Infandum, regina, jubes renovare dolorem.
Infantum, regina, jubes renovare dolorem.

Sic haud dubito veterrimis codicibus ſcriptum fuiſſe: quod ſatis conſtat ex perantiqua illa Britannorum cantilena vocata *Chevy Chace*, cujus autor hunc locum ſibi aſcivit in hæc verba,

The child may rue that is unborn,

III. VER. 4.

Trojanas ut *opes*, & lamentabile regnum
Eruerint Danaï,

Trojanas ut *oves* & lamentabile regnum
Diruerint.

Mallem *oves* potius quam *opes*, quoniam in antiquiſſimis illis temporibus oves & armenta divitiæ regum fuere. Vel fortaſſe *oves Paridis* innuit, quas ſuper Idam nuperrime paſcebat, & jam in vindictam pro Helenæ raptu, a Menelao, Ajace [vid. Hor. Sat. ii. 3.] aliiſque ducibus, merito occiſas.

IV. VER. 5.

Quæque ipſe *miſerrima vidi*,
Et quorum pars magna fui.
Quæque ipſe *miſerrimus audi*,
Et quorum pars magna fui——

Omnia tam *audita* quam *viſa* recta diſtinctione enarrare hic Æneas profitetur: multa quorum nox ea fatalis ſola conſcia fuit, vir probus & pius tanquam *viſa* referre non potuit.

V. VER. 7.

Quis talia *fando*
Temperet *a* lacrymis?
Quis talia *flendo*,
Temperet *in* lachrymis?

Major enim doloris indicatio, abſque modo lachrymare, quam ſolummodo a lachrymis non temperare.

VI. VER. 9.

Et jam nox *humida* cœlo
Præcipitat, ſuadentque *cadentia* ſydera ſomnos.
Et jam nox *lumina* cœlo
Præcipitat, ſuadentque *latentia* ſydera ſomnos.

Lectio, *humida*, veſpertinum rorem ſolùm innuere videtur: magis mi arridet *Lumina*, quæ *latentia*

tentia poſtquam *præcipitantur*, Auroræ adventum annunciant.

Sed ſi tantus amor *caſus* cognoſcere *noſtros*,
Et *breviter* Trojæ, *ſupremum* audire *laborem*.
Sed ſi tantus amor *curas* cognoſcere *noctis*,
Et *brevè ter* Trojæ *ſuperûmque* audire *labores*.

Curæ Noctis (ſcilicet noctis excidii Trojani) magis compendioſe (vel ut dixit ipſe *breviter*) totam belli cataſtrophen denotat, quam diffuſa illa & indeterminata lectio, *caſus noſtros*. *Ter* audire gratum fuiſſe Didoni, patet ex libro quarto, ubi dicitur, *Iliacoſque* iterum *demens audire labores expoſcit*: *Ter* enim pro *ſæpe* uſurpatur. *Trojæ, ſuperûmque labores*, recte, quia non tantum homines ſed & Dii ſeſe his laboribus immiſcuerunt. Vide Æn. ii. ver. 610, *etc.*

Quanquam animus meminiſſe horret, *luctuque refugit*,
Incipiam.——
Quanquam animus meminiſſe horret, *luctuſque reſurgit*.

Reſurgit multo proprius dolorem *renaſcentem* notat, quam ut hactenus, *refugit*.

VII. Ver. 19.

Fracti bello, fatiſque repulſi
Ductores Danaûm, tot jam labentibus annis
Inſtar montis *Equum*, divina Palladis arte
Ædificant——*etc.*

Tracti bello, fatiſque repulſi.

Tracti & *repulſi*, antitheſis perpulchra! *Fracti*, frigidè & vulgaritèr.

† *Equum*

Equum jam *Trojanum* (ut vulgus loquitur) adeamus; quem ſi *equam Græcam* vocabis, lector, minime pecces: Solæ enim femellæ utero geſtant. Uterumque *armato milite complent*—Uteroque *recuſſo Inſonuere cavæ*—*Atque* utero *ſonitum quater arma dedere*——*Incluſos* utero *Danaos*, &c. Vox *fœta* non convenit maribus,—*Scandit fatalis machina muros*, Fœta *armis*——Palladem virginem, equo mari fabricando invigilare decuiſſe, quis putat? et incredibile prorſus! Quamobrem exiſtimo veram *equæ* lectionem paſſim reſtituendam, niſi ubi forte, metri cauſſa, *equum* potius quam *equam*, *genus* pro *ſexu*, dixit Maro. Vale! dum hæc paucula corriges, majus opus moveo.

AN

ESSAY

Of the learned

MARTINUS SCRIBLERUS,

CONCERNING THE

ORIGIN OF SCIENCES.

Written to the moſt Learned Dr. ——— F. R. S. from the Deſerts of NUBIA.

AMONG all the enquiries which have been purſued by the curious and inquiſitive, there is none more worthy the ſearch of a learned head, than the fource from whence we derive thoſe arts and ſciences which raiſe us ſo far above the vulgar, the countries in which they roſe, and the channels by which they have been conveyed. As thoſe, who firſt brought them among us, attained them by travelling into the remoteſt parts of the earth, I may boaſt of ſome advantages by the ſame means; ſince I write this from the deſerts of Æthiopia, from thoſe plains of ſand, which have buried the pride of invading armies, with my foot perhaps at this inſtant ten fathom over the grave of Cambyſes; a ſolitude to which neither Pythagoras nor Apollonius ever penetrated.

It

It is univerſally agreed, that arts and ſciences were derived to us from the Ægyptians and Indians; but from whom they firſt received them, is yet a ſecret. The higheſt period of time, to which the learned attempt to trace them, is the beginning of the Aſſyrian monarchy, when their inventors were worſhipped as Gods. It is therefore neceſſary to go backward into times even more remote, and to gain ſome knowledge of their hiſtory, from whatever dark and broken hints may any way be found in ancient authors concerning them.

Nor Troy nor Thebes were the firſt of empires; we have mention, though not hiſtories, of an earlier warlike people called the Pygmæans. I cannot but perſuade myſelf, from thoſe accounts in * Homer, Ariſtotle, and others, of their hiſtory, wars and revolutions, and from the very air in which thoſe authors ſpeak of them as of things known, that they were then a part of the ſtudy of the learned. And though all we directly hear is of their military atchievements, in the brave defence of their country from the annual invaſions of a powerful enemy, yet I cannot doubt, but that they excelled as much in the arts of peaceful government; though there remain no traces of their civil inſtitutions. Empires as great have been ſwallowed up in the wreck of time, and ſuch ſudden periods have been put to them, as occaſion a total ignorance of their ſtory. And if I ſhould conjecture, that the like happened to this nation from a general

* Il. iii. Hom.

extirpation

extirpation of the people by thoſe flocks of monſtrous birds, wherewith antiquity agrees they were continually infeſted; it ought not to ſeem more incredible, than that one of the Baleares was waſted by rabbits, * Smynthe by mice, and of late † Bermudas almoſt depopulated by rats. Nothing is more natural to imagine, than that the few ſurvivors of that empire retired into the depths of their deſerts, where they lived undiſturbed, till they were found out by Oſiris in his travels to inſtruct mankind.

" He met, ſays ‡ Diodorus, in Æthiopia a ſort " of little Satyrs, who were hairy one half of their " body, and whoſe leader Pan accompanied him " in his expedition for the civilizing of mankind." Now of this great perſonage Pan we have a very particular deſcription in the ancient writers; who unanimouſly agree to repreſent him ſhaggy-bearded, hairy all over, half a man and half a beaſt, and walking erect with a ſtaff, the poſture in which his race do to this day appear among us. And ſince the chief thing to which he applied himſelf, was the civilizing of mankind, it ſhould ſeem, that the firſt principles of ſcience muſt be received from that nation, to which the Gods were by § Homer ſaid to reſort twelve days every year, for the converſation of its wiſe and juſt inhabitants.

If from Ægypt we proceed to take a view of India, we ſhall find, that their knowledge alſo derived itſelf from the ſame ſource. To that country

* Euſtathius in Hom. Il. i.
† Speede, in Bermudas.
‡ L. i. ch. 18. Diod.
§ Il. i.

did

did theſe noble creatures accompany Bacchus in his expedition under the conduct of Silenus, who is alſo deſcribed to us with the ſame marks and qualifications. "Mankind is ignorant, ſaith *Diodorus, "whence Silenus derived his birth, through his "great antiquity; but he had a tail on his loins, "as likewiſe had all his progeny, in ſign of their "deſcent." Here then they ſettled a colony, which to this day ſubſiſts with the ſame tails. From this time they ſeem to have communicated themſelves only to thoſe men, who retired from the converſe of their own ſpecies to a more uninterrupted life of contemplation. I am much inclined to believe, that in the midſt of thoſe ſolitudes they inſtituted the ſo much celebrated order of Gymnoſophiſts. For whoever obſerves the ſcene and manner of their life, will eaſily find them to have imitated with all exactneſs imaginable the manners and cuſtoms of their maſters and inſtructors. They are ſaid to dwell in the thickeſt woods, to go naked, to ſuffer their bodies to be over-run with hair, and their nails to grow to a prodigious length. † Plutarch ſays, "they eat what they could get in the "fields, their drink was water, and their bed "made of leaves or moſs." And ‡ Herodotus tells us, that they eſteemed it a great exploit to kill very many ants or creeping things.

Hence we ſee, that the two nations which contend for the origin of learning, are the ſame that

* Diod. L. iii. ch. 69.
† Plutarch in his Orat. on Alexander's fortune.
‡ Herodot. L. i.

have

have ever moſt abounded with this ingenious race. Though they have conteſted, which was firſt bleſt with the riſe of ſcience, yet have they conſpired in being grateful to their common maſters. Ægypt is ſo well known to have worſhiped them of old in their own images; and India may be credibly ſuppoſed to have done the ſame from that adoration, which they paid in latter times to the tooth of one of theſe hairy philoſophers; in juſt gratitude, as it ſhould ſeem, to the mouth, from which they received their knowledge.

Paſs we now over into Greece: where we find Orpheus returning out of Ægypt, with the ſame intent as Oſiris and Bacchus made their expeditions. From this period it was, that Greece firſt heard the name of ſatyrs, or owned them for *ſemidei*. And hence it is ſurely reaſonable to conclude, that he brought ſome of this wonderful ſpecies along with him, who alſo had a leader of the line of Pan, of the ſame name, and expreſly called king by * Theocritus. If thus much be allowed, we eaſily account for two of the ſtrangeſt reports in all antiquity. One is, that of the beaſts following the muſick of Orpheus; which has been interpreted of his taming ſavage tempers, but will thus have a literal application. The other, which we moſt inſiſt upon, is the fabulous ſtory of the Gods compreſſing women in woods under beſtial appearances; which will be ſolved by the love theſe ſages are known to bear to the females of our

* Πὰν Ἀνάξ, Theocr. Id. i.

kind. I am ſenſible it may be objected, that they are ſaid to have been compreſſed in the ſhape of different animals; but to this we anſwer, that women under ſuch apprehenſions hardly know what ſhape they have to deal with.

From what has been laſt ſaid, it is highly credible, that to this ancient and generous race the world is indebted, if not for the heroes, at leaſt for the acuteſt wits of antiquity. One of the moſt remarkable inſtances, is that great mimick genius * Æſop, for whoſe extraction from theſe *ſylveſtres homines* we may gather an argument from Planudes, who ſays, that Æſop ſignifies the ſame thing as Æthiop, the original nation of our people. For a ſecond argument we may offer the deſcription of his perſon, which was ſhort, deformed, and almoſt ſavage; inſomuch that he might have lived in the woods, had not the benevolence of his temper made him rather adapt himſelf to our manners, and come to court in wearing apparel. The third proof is his acute and ſatyrical wit; and laſtly, his great knowledge in the nature of beaſts, together with the natural pleaſure he took to ſpeak of them upon all occaſions.

The next inſtance I ſhall produce is † Socrates. Firſt, it was a tradition, that he was of an uncommon birth from the reſt of men: ſecondly, he had a countenance confeſſing the line he ſprung from, being bald, flat-noſed, with prominent eyes, and a downward look: thirdly, he turned certain fables

* Vit. Æſop. initio. † Vid. Plato and Xenophon.

of

of Æſop into verſe, probably out of his reſpect to beaſts in general, and love to his family in particular.

In proceſs of time the women, with whom theſe Sylvans would have lovingly cohabited, were either taught by mankind, or induced by an abhorrence of their ſhapes, to ſhun their embraces; ſo that our ſages were neceſſitated to mix with beaſts. This by degrees occaſioned the hair of their poſterity to grow higher than their middles; it aroſe in one generation to their arms, in the ſecond it invaded their necks, in the third it gained the aſcendant of their heads, till the degenerate appearance, in which the ſpecies is now immerſed, became completed. Though we muſt here obſerve, that there were a few, who fell not under the common calamity; there being ſome unprejudiced women in every age, by virtue of whom a total extinction of the original race was prevented. It is remarkable alſo, that even where they were mixed, the defection from their nature was not ſo entire, but there ſtill appeared marvellous qualities among them, as was manifeſt in thoſe, who followed Alexander in India. How did they attend his army and ſurvey his order! how did they caſt themſelves into the ſame forms for march or for combat! what an imitation was there of all his diſcipline! the ancient true remains of a warlike diſpoſition, and of that conſtitution, which they enjoyed, while they were yet a monarchy.

To proceed to Italy: at the firſt appearance of theſe wild philoſophers, there were ſome of the

leaſt mixed who vouchſafed to converſe with mankind; which is evident from the name of * Fauns, *a fando*, or ſpeaking. Such was he, who coming out of the woods in hatred to tyranny, encouraged the Roman army to proceed againſt the Hetruſcans, who would have reſtored Tarquin. But here, as in all the weſtern parts of the world, there was a great and memorable æra, in which they began to be ſilent. This we may place ſomething near the time of Ariſtotle, when the number, vanity, and folly of human philoſophers encreaſed, by which men's heads became too much puzzled to receive the ſimpler wiſdom of theſe ancient Sylvans; the queſtions of that academy were too numerous to be conſiſtent with their eaſe to anſwer; and too intricate, extravagant, idle, or pernicious, to be any other than a deriſion and ſcorn unto them. From this period, if we ever hear of their giving anſwers, it is only when caught, bound, and conſtrained, in like manner as was that ancient Grecian prophet, Proteus.

Accordingly we read in † Sylla's time of ſuch a philoſopher taken near Dyrrachium, who would not be perſuaded to give them a lecture by all they could ſay to him, and only ſhewed his power in ſounds by neighing like a horſe.

But a more ſucceſsful attempt was made in Auguſtus's reign by the inquiſitive genius of the great Virgil; whom, together with Varus, the commentators ſuppoſe to have been the true perſons, who

* Livy. † Plutarch. in Vit. Syllæ.

are

are related in the ſixth bucolick to have caught a philoſopher, and doubtleſs a genuine one of the race of the old Silenus. To prevail upon him to be communicative (of the importance of which Virgil was well aware) they not only tied him faſt, but allured him likewiſe by a courteous preſent of a comely maiden called Ægle, which made him ſing both merrily and inſtructively. In this ſong we have their doctrine of the creation, the ſame in all probability as was taught ſo many ages before in the great pygmæan empire, and ſeveral hieroglyphical fables under which they couched or embelliſhed their morals. For which reaſon I look upon this bucolick as an ineſtimable treaſure of the moſt ancient ſcience.

In the reign of Conſtantine we hear of another taken in a net, and brought to Alexandria, round whom the people flocked to hear his wiſdom; but as Ammianus Marcellinus reporteth, he proved a dumb philoſopher; and only inſtructed by action.

The laſt we ſhall ſpeak of, who ſeemeth to be of the true race, is ſaid by St. Jerome to have met St. * Anthony in a deſert; who enquiring the way of him, he ſhewed his underſtanding and courteſy by pointing, but would not anſwer, for he was a dumb philoſopher alſo.

Theſe are all the notices, which I am at preſent able to gather, of the appearance of ſo great and learned a people on your ſide of the world. But if we return to their ancient native ſeats, Africa and

* Vit. St. Ant.

India, we ſhall there find, even in modern times, many traces of their original conduct and valour.

In Africa (as we read among the indefatigable Mr. Purchas's collections) a body of them, whoſe leader was inflamed with love for a woman, by martial power and ſtratagem won a fort from the Portugueſe.

But I muſt leave all others at preſent to celebrate the praiſe of two of their unparalleled monarchs in India. The one was Perimal the magnificent, a prince moſt learned and communicative; to whom in Malabar their exceſs of zeal dedicated a temple, raiſed on ſeven hundred pillars, not inferior in * Maffæus's opinion to thoſe of Agrippa in the Pantheon. The other, Hanimant the Marvellous, his relation and ſucceſſor, whoſe knowledge was ſo great, as made his followers doubt if even that wiſe ſpecies could arrive at ſuch perfection: and therefore they rather imagined him and his race a ſort of gods formed into apes. His was the tooth which the Portugueſe took in Biſnagar 1559, for which the Indians offered, according to † Linſchotten, the immenſe ſum of ſeven hundred thouſand ducats. Nor let me quit this head without mentioning with all due reſpect Orang Outang the great, the laſt of this line; whoſe unhappy chance it was to fall into the hands of Europeans. Oran Outang, whoſe value was not known to us, for he was a mute philoſopher: Oran Outang, by whoſe diſſection the learned Dr. Tyſon * has added a con-

* Maff. l. i. † Linſchot. ch. 44.
‡ Dr. Tyſon's Anatomy of a Pigmy, 4to.

firmation

firmation to this ſyſtem, from the reſemblance between the *homo ſylveſtris*, and our human body, in thoſe organs by which the rational ſoul is exerted.

We muſt now deſcend to conſider this people as ſunk into the *bruta natura* by their continual commerce with beaſts. Yet even at this time, what experiments do they not afford us, of relieving ſome from the ſpleen, and others from impoſthumes, by occaſioning laughter at proper ſeaſons; with what readineſs do they enter into the imitation of whatever is remarkable in human life? and what ſurpriſing relations have Le Comte * and others given of their appetites, actions, conceptions, affections, varieties of imaginations, and abilities capable of purſuing them? If under their preſent low circumſtances of birth and breeding, and in ſo ſhort a term of life as is now allotted them, they ſo far exceed all beaſts, and equal many men; what prodigies may we not conceive of thoſe, who were *nati melioribus annis*, thoſe primitive, longæval, and anti-diluvian man-tigers, who firſt taught ſcience to the world?

This account, which is entirely my own, I am proud to imagine has traced knowledge from a fountain correſpondent to ſeveral opinions of the ancients, though hitherto undiſcovered both by them and the more ingenious moderns. And now what ſhall I ſay to mankind in the thought of this great diſcovery? what, but that they ſhould abate

* Father Le Comte, a jeſuit, in the account of his travels.

of their pride, and conſider that the authors of our knowledge are among the beaſts. That theſe, who were our elder brothers by a day in the creation, whoſe kingdom (like that in the ſcheme of Plato) was governed by philoſophers, who flouriſhed with learning in Æthiopia and India, are now undiſtinguiſhed, and known only by the ſame appellation as the man-tiger and the monkey!

As to ſpeech, I make no queſtion, that there are remains of the firſt and leſs corrupted race in their native deſerts, who yet have the power of it. But the vulgar reaſon given by the Spaniards, "that "they will not ſpeak for fear of being ſet to "work," is alone a ſufficient one, conſidering how exceedingly all other learned perſons affect their eaſe. A ſecond is, that theſe obſervant creatures, having been eye-witneſſes of the cruelty with which that nation treated their brother Indians, find it neceſſary not to ſhow themſelves to be men, that they may be protected not only from work, but from cruelty alſo. Thirdly, they could at beſt take no delight to converſe with the Spaniards, whoſe grave and ſullen temper is ſo averſe to that natural and open cheerfulneſs, which is generally obſerved to accompany all true knowledge.

But now were it poſſible, that any way could be found to draw forth their latent qualities, I cannot but think it would be highly ſerviceable to the learned world both in reſpect of recovering paſt knowledge, and promoting the future. Might there not be found certain gentle and artful methods, whereby to endear us to them? Is there no

nation in the world, whoſe natural turn is adapted to engage their ſociety, and win them by a ſweet ſimilitude of manners? Is there no nation, where the men might allure them by a diſtinguiſhing civility, and in a manner faſcinate them by aſſimilated motions? no nation, where the women with eaſy freedoms, and the gentleſt treatment, might oblige the loving creatures to ſenſible returns of humanity? The love I bear my native country prompts me to wiſh this nation might be Great Britain; but alas! in our preſent wretched, divided condition, how can we hope, that foreigners of ſo great prudence will freely declare their ſentiments in the midſt of violent parties, and at ſo vaſt a diſtance from their friends, relations, and country? the affection I bear our neighbour-ſtate, would incline me to wiſh it were Holland——*Sed lævâ in parte mamillæ Nil ſalit Arcadico.* It is from France then we muſt expect this reſtoration of learning, whoſe late monarch took the ſciences under his protection, and raiſed them to ſo great a heighth. May we not hope their emiſſaries will ſome time or other have inſtructions, not only to invite learned men into their country, but learned beaſts, the true ancient man-tigers I mean of Æthiopia and India? Might not the talents of each kind of theſe be adapted to the improvement of the ſeveral ſciences? the man-tigers to inſtruct heroes, ſtateſmen, and ſcholars; baboons to teach ceremony and addreſs to courtiers; monkeys, the art of pleaſing in converſation, and agreeable affectations to ladies and their lovers; apes of leſs learning, to form comedians and dancing-maſters;

cing-maſters; and marmoſets, court pages and young Engliſh travellers? But the diſtinguiſhing of each kind, and allotting the proper buſineſs to each, I leave to the inquiſitive and penetrating genius of the jeſuits in their reſpective miſſions.

Vale & fruere.

ANNUS MIRABILIS:

OR,

THE WONDERFUL

EFFECTS OF THE APPROACHING

CONJUNCTION OF THE PLANETS

JUPITER, MARS, AND SATURN.

By MART. SCRIBLERUS, *Philomath.*

In nova fert animus mutatas dicere formas
Corpora——

I SUPPOSE every body is ſufficiently apprized of, and duly prepared for, the famous conjunction to be celebrated the 29th of this inſtant December 1722, foretold by all the ſages of antiquity under the name of the *annus mirabilis*, or the metamorphoſtical conjunction: a word which denotes the mutual transformation of ſexes (the effect of that configuration of the celeſtial bodies) the human males being to be turned into females, and the human females into males.

The Egyptians have repreſented this great tranſformation by ſeveral ſignificant hieroglyphics, particularly one very remarkable. There are carved

upon an obeliſk, a barber and a midwife; the barber delivers his razor to the midwife, and ſhe her ſwaddling-clothes to the barber. Accordingly Thales Mileſius (who, like the reſt of his countrymen, borrowed his learning from the Egyptians) after having computed the time of this famous conjunction, "then," ſays he, "ſhall men and wo-"men mutually exchange the pangs of ſhaving "and childbearing."

Anaximander modeſtly deſcribes this metamorphoſis in mathematical terms, "then," ſays he, "ſhall the negative quantity of the women be "turned into poſitive, their — into + (i. e.) their "*minus* into *plus*."

Plato not only ſpeaks of this great change, but deſcribes all the preparations towards it. "Long "before the bodily transformation (ſays he) nature "ſhall begin the moſt difficult part of her work, "by changing the ideas and inclinations of the "two ſexes: men ſhall turn effeminate, and "women manly; wives ſhall domineer, and huſ-"bands obey; ladies ſhall ride a-horſeback, "dreſſed like cavaliers; princes and nobles appear "in night-rails and petticoats; men ſhall ſqueak "upon theatres with female voices, and women "corrupt virgins; lords ſhall knot and cut paper; "and even the northern people, ἀῤῥσενα κυπριν "ὀρινειν." A phraſe (which for modeſty's ſake I forbear to tranſlate) which denotes a vice too frequent amongſt us.

That the miniſtry foreſaw this great change, is plain from the callico act; whereby it is now become

come the occupation of the women all over England to convert their uſeleſs female habits into beds, window-curtains, chairs, and joint-ſtools; undreſſing themſelves (as it were) before their tranſformation.

The philoſophy of this transformation will not ſeem ſurprizing to people, who ſearch into the bottom of things. Madam Bourignon, a devout French lady, has ſhewn us, how man was at firſt created male and female in one individual, having the faculty of propagation within himſelf: a circumſtance neceſſary to the ſtate of innocence, wherein a man's happineſs was not to depend upon the caprice of another. It was not till after he had made a *faux pas*, that he had his female mate. Many ſuch transformations of individuals have been well atteſted; particularly one by Montaigne, and another by the late biſhop of Saliſbury. From all which it appears, that this ſyſtem of male and female has already undergone, and may hereafter ſuffer, ſeveral alterations. Every ſmatterer in anatomy knows, that a woman is but an introverted man; a new fuſion and *flatus* will turn the hollow bottom of a bottle into a convexity: but I forbear for the ſake of my modeſt men-readers, who are in a few days to be virgins.

In ſome ſubjects the ſmalleſt alterations will do: ſome men are ſufficiently ſpread about the hips, and contrived with that female ſoftneſs, that they want only the negative quantity to make them buxom wenches; and there are women who are,

as

as it were, already the *ebauche* * of a good ſturdy man. If nature could be puzzled, it will be how to beſtow the redundant matter of the exuberant bubbies that now appear about town, or how to roll out the ſhort dapper fellows into well-ſized women.

This great conjunction will begin to operate on Saturday the 29th inſtant. Accordingly about eight at night, as Senezino ſhall begin at the opera, *Si videte*, he ſhall be obſerved to make an unuſual motion; upon which the audience will be affected with a red ſuffuſion over their countenance: and becauſe a ſtrong ſuccuſſion of the muſcles of the belly is neceſſary towards performing this great operation, both ſexes will be thrown into a profuſe involuntary laughter. Then, to uſe the modeſt terms of Anaximander, "ſhall negative quantity "be turned into poſitive, *&c.*" Time never beheld, nor will it ever aſſemble, ſuch a number of untouched virgins within thoſe walls! but alas! ſuch will be the impatience and curioſity of people to act in their new capacity, that many of them will be completed men and women that very night. To prevent the diſorders that may happen upon this occaſion, is the chief deſign of this paper.

Gentlemen have begun already to make uſe of this conjunction to compaſs their filthy purpoſes. They tell the ladies, forſooth, that it is only parting with a periſhable commodity, hardly of ſo much value as a callico under-petticoat; ſince, like its miſtreſs, it will be uſeleſs in the form it is now in.

* Sketch, rough draught, or eſſay,

If

If the ladies have no regard to the diſhonour and immorality of the action, I deſire they will conſider, that nature, who never deſtroys her own productions, will exempt big-bellied women till the time of their lying-in; ſo that not to be tranſformed, will be the ſame as to be pregnant. If they do not think it worth while to defend a fortreſs, that is to be demoliſhed in a few days, let them reflect, that it will be a melancholy thing nine months hence to be brought to bed of a baſtard; a poſthumous baſtard, as it were, to which the *quondam* father can be no more than a dry nurſe.

This wonderful transformation is the inſtrument of nature to balance matters between the ſexes. The cruelty of ſcornful miſtreſſes ſhall be returned; the ſlighted maid ſhall grow into an imperious gallant, and reward her undoer with a big-belly, and a baſtard.

It is hardly poſſible to imagine the revolutions, that this wonderful phænomenon will occaſion over the face of the earth. I long impatiently to ſee the proceedings of the parliament of Paris, as to the title of ſucceſſion to the crown; this being a caſe not provided for by the ſalique law. There will be no preventing diſorders among friars and monks; for certainly vows of chaſtity do not bind, but under the ſex in which they were made. The ſame will hold good with marriages, though I think it will be a ſcandal among proteſtants for huſbands and wives to part, ſince there remains ſtill a poſſibility to perform the *debitum conjugale*, by the huſband

band being *femme couverte.* I ſubmit it to the judgment of the gentlemen of the long robe, whether this transformation does not diſcharge all ſuits of rapes.

The pope muſt undergo a new groping, but the falſe prophet Mahomet has contrived matters well for his ſucceſſors; for as the grand ſignior has now a great many fine women, he will then have as many fine young gentlemen, at his devotion.

Theſe are ſurprizing ſcenes; but I beg leave to affirm, that the ſolemn operations of nature are ſubjects of contemplation, not of ridicule. Therefore I make it my earneſt requeſt to the merry fellows and giggling girls about town, that they would not put themſelves in a high twitter, when they go to viſit a general lying-in of his firſt child; his officers ſerving as midwives, nurſes, and rockers diſpenſing caudle; or if they behold the reverend prelates dreſſing the heads and airing the linen at court; I beg they will remember that theſe offices muſt be filled with people of the greateſt regularity, and beſt characters. For the ſame reaſon I am ſorry, that a certain prelate, who, notwithſtanding his confinement *, ſtill preſerves his healthy, cheerful countenance, cannot come in time to be a nurſe at court.

I likewiſe earneſtly intreat the maids of honour, (then enſigns and captains of the guards) that at

* In December 1723.

their

their firſt ſetting out they have ſome regard to their former ſtation; and do not run wild through all the infamous houſes about town: that the preſent grooms of the bed-chamber (then maids of honour) would not eat chalk and lime in their green-ſickneſs: and in general, that the men would remember they are become retromingent, and not by inadvertency lift up againſt walls and poſts.

Petticoats will not be burdenſome to the clergy; but balls and aſſemblies will be indecent for ſome time.

As for you, coquettes, bawds, and chamber-maids (the future miniſters, plenipotentiaries, and cabinet-counſellors to the princes of the earth) manage the great intrigues that will be committed to your charge, with your uſual ſecrecy and conduct; and the affairs of your maſters will go better than ever.

O ye exchange women! (our right worſhipful repreſentatives that are to be) be not ſo griping in the ſale of your ware as your predeceſſors, but conſider that the nation, like a ſpend-thrift heir, has run out: be likewiſe a little more continent in your tongues than you are at preſent, elſe the length of debates will ſpoil your dinners.

You houſewifely good women who now preſide over the confectionary (henceforth commiſſioners of the treaſury) be ſo good as to diſpenſe the ſugar-plumbs of the government with a more impartial and frugal hand.

Ye prudes and cenſorious old maids (the hopes of the bench) exert but your uſual talent of finding faults, and the laws will be ſtrictly executed; only I would not have you proceed upon ſuch ſlender evidences as you have done hitherto.

It is from you, eloquent oyſter-merchants of Billingſgate, (juſt ready to be called to the bar, and quoifed like your ſiſter ſerjeants) that we expect the ſhortening the time, and leſſening the expences of law-ſuits: for I think you are obſerved to bring your debates to a ſhort iſſue; and even cuſtom will reſtrain you from taking the oyſter, and leaving only the ſhell to your client.

O ye phyſicians, who in the figure of old women are to clean the tripe in the markets, ſcour it as effectually as you have done that of your patients, and the town will fare moſt deliciouſly on Saturdays.

I cannot but congratulate human nature upon this happy transformation; the only expedient left to reſtore the liberties and tranquillity of mankind. This is ſo evident, that it is almoſt an affront to common ſenſe to inſiſt upon the proof: if there can be any ſuch ſtupid creature as to doubt it, I deſire he will make but the following obvious reflection. There are in Europe alone, at preſent, about a million of ſturdy fellows, under the denomination of ſtanding forces, with arms in their hands: that thoſe are maſters of the lives, liberties,

and fortunes of all the reſt, I believe no body will deny. It is no leſs true in fact, that reams of paper, and above a ſquare mile of ſkins of vellum have been employed to no purpoſe to ſettle peace among thoſe ſons of violence. Pray who is he that will ſay unto them, " go and diſband your-" ſelves?" but lo! by this transformation it is done at once, and the halcyon days of publick tranquillity return: for neither the military temper nor diſcipline can taint the ſoft ſex for a whole age to come: *bellaque matribus inviſa*, wars odious to mothers, will not grow immediately palatable in their paternal ſtate.

Nor will the influence of this transformation be leſs in family tranquillity than it is in national. Great faults will be amended, and frailties forgiven, on both ſides. A wife, who has been diſturbed with late hours, and choaked with the haugoût of a ſot, will remember her ſufferings, and avoid the temptations; and will for the ſame reaſon indulge her mate, in his female capacity, in ſome paſſions, which ſhe is ſenſible from experience are natural to the ſex; ſuch as vanity, fine clothes, being admired, *&c.* And how tenderly muſt ſhe uſe her mate under the breeding qualms and labour-pains which ſhe hath felt herſelf? in ſhort, all unreaſonable demands upon huſbands muſt ceaſe, becauſe they are already ſatisfied, from natural experience, that they are impoſſible.

89039

That the ladies may govern the affairs of the world, and the gentlemen thoſe of their houſehold, better than either of them have hitherto done, is the hearty deſire of

Their moſt ſincere well-wiſher,

M. S.

A

SPECIMEN

OF

SCRIBLERUS's REPORTS.

Stradling *verſus* Stiles.

Le report del caſe argue en le commen banke devant tout les juſtices de le meſme banke, en le quart. An. du raygne de roy Jaques, entre Matthew Stradling, plant. & Peter Stiles, def. en un action propter certos equos coloratos, *Anglicè*, pyed horſes, poſt, per le dit Matthew vers le dit Peter.

Le recitel del caſe. SIR John Swale, of Swale-Hall in Swale-Dale caſt by the River Swale, kt. made his Laſt Will and Teſtament: in which, among other Bequeſts was this, *viz.* Out of the kind love and reſpect that I bear unto my much honoured and good friend Mr. Matthew Stradling, gent. I do bequeath unto the ſaid Matthew Stradling, gent. all my black and white horſes. The Teſtator had ſix black horſes, ſix white horſes, and ſix pyed horſes.

Le point. The Debate therefore was, Whether or no the ſaid Matthew Stradling ſhould have the ſaid pyed horſes by virtue of the ſaid Bequeſt.

Pour le pl. Atkins apprentice pour le pl. moy ſemble que le pl. recovera.

And firſt of all it ſeemeth expedient to conſider what is the nature of horſes, and alſo what is the nature of colours; and ſo the argument will conſequently divide itſelf in a twofold way, that is to ſay, the formal part, and ſubſtantial part. Horſes are the ſubſtantial part, or thing bequeathed: black and white the formal or deſcriptive part.

Horſe, in a phyſical ſenſe, doth import a certain quadrupede or four-footed animal, which by the apt and regular diſpoſition of certain proper and convenient parts, is adapted, fitted and conſtituted for the uſe and need of man. Yea, ſo neceſſary and conducive was this animal conceived to be to the behoof of the commonweal, that ſundry and divers acts of parliament have from time to time been made in favour of horſes.

1ſt. Edw. VI. Makes the tranſporting of horſes out of the kingdom, no leſs a penalty than the forfeiture of 40l.

2d and 3d Edward VI. Takes from horſe-ſtealers the benefit of their clergy.

And the Statutes of the 27th and 32d of Hen. VIII. condeſcend ſo far as to take care of their very breed: Theſe our wiſe anceſtors prudently forſeeing, that they could not better take care of their own poſterity, than by alſo taking care of that of their horſes.

And of ſo great eſteem are horſes in the eye of the common law, that when a Knight of the Bath committeth

committeth any great and enormous crime, his punishment is to have his ſpurs chopt off with a cleaver, being, as maſter Bracton well obſerveth, unworthy to ride on a horſe.

Littleton, Sect. 315. ſaith, If tenants in common make a leaſe reſerving for rent a horſe, they ſhall have but one aſſize, becauſe, ſaith the book, the law will not ſuffer a horſe to be ſevered. Another argument of what high eſtimation the law maketh of an horſe.

But as the great difference ſeemeth not to be ſo much touching the ſubſtantial part, horſes, let us proceed to the formal or deſcriptive part, viz. What horſes they are that come within this Bequeſt.

Colours are commonly of various kinds and different ſorts; of which white and black are the two extremes, and, conſequently, comprehend within them all other colours whatſoever.

By a Bequeſt therefore of black and white horſes, grey or pyed horſes may well paſs; for when two extremes, or remoteſt ends of any thing are deviſed, the law, by common intendment, will intend whatſoever is contained between them to be deviſed too.

But the preſent caſe is ſtill ſtronger, coming not only within the intendment, but alſo the very letter of the words.

By the word black, all the horſes that are black are deviſed; by the word white, are deviſed thoſe that are white; and by the ſame word, with the conjunction copulative, and, between

them, the horſes that are black and white, that is to ſay, pyed, are deviſed alſo.

Whatever is black and white is pyed, and whatever is pyed is black and white; *ergo*, black and white is pyed, and, *vice verſa*, pyed is black and white.

If therefore black and white horſes are deviſed, pyed horſes ſhall paſs by ſuch deviſe; but black and white horſes are deviſed; *ergo*, the pl. ſhall have the pyed horſes.

Pour le Defend.

Catlyne Serjeant: moy ſemble al' contrary, the plaintiff ſhall not have the pyed horſes by intendment; for if by the deviſe of black and white horſes, not only black and white horſes, but horſes of any colour between theſe two extremes may paſs, then not only pyed and grey horſes, but alſo red or bay horſes would paſs likewiſe, which would be abſurd and againſt reaſon. And this is another ſtrong argument in law, *Nihil, quod eſt contra rationem, eſt licitum*; for reaſon is the life of the law, nay the common law is nothing but reaſon; which is to be underſtood of artificial perfection and reaſon gotten by long ſtudy, and not of man's natural reaſon; for *nemo naſcitur artifex*, and legal reaſon *eſt ſumma ratio*; and therefore if all the reaſon that is diſperſed into ſo many different heads, were united into one, he could not make ſuch a law as the law of England; becauſe by many ſucceſſions of ages it has been fired and refired by grave and learned men; ſo that the old

old rule may be verified in it, *Neminem oportet esse legibus sapientiorem.*

As therefore pyed horses do not come within the intendment of the bequest, so neither do they within the letter of the words.

A pyed horse is not a white horse, neither is a pyed a black horse; how then can pyed horses come under the words of black and white horses?

Besides, where custom hath adapted a certain determinate name to any one thing, in all devises, feofments and grants, that certain name shall be made use of, and no uncertain circumlocutory descriptions shall be allowed; for certainty is the father of right, and the mother of justice.

Le reste del argument jeo ne pouvois oyer, car jeo fui disturb en mon place.

Le court fuit longement en doubt' de c'est matter, et apres grand deliberation eu.

Judgment fuit donne pour le pl. nisi causa.

Motion in arrest of judgment, that the pyed horses were mares; and thereupon an inspection was prayed.

Et sur ceo le court advisare vult.

A

KEY to the LOCK;

OR, A

TREATISE,

PROVING BEYOND ALL CONTRADICTION

The Dangerous Tendency of a late POEM, entitled

THE

RAPE of the LOCK,

TO

GOVERNMENT and RELIGION.

Written in the Year 1714.

A

KEY to the LOCK.

SINCE this unhappy diviſion of our nation into parties, it is not to be imagined how many artifices have been made uſe of by writers to obſcure the truth, and cover deſigns which may be detrimental to the public. In particular, it has been their cuſtom of late to vent their political ſpleen in allegory and fable. If an honeſt believing nation is to be made a jeſt of, we have a ſtory of John Bull and his wife; if a treaſurer is to be glanced at, an ant with a white ſtraw is introduced; if a treaty of commerce is to be ridiculed, it is immediately metamorphoſed into a tale of count Tariff.

But if any of theſe malevolents have a ſmall talent in rhime, they principally delight to convey their malice in that pleaſing way; as it were gilding the pill, and concealing the poiſon under the ſweetneſs of numbers.

It is the duty of every well-deſigning ſubject to prevent, as far as he can, the ill conſequences of ſuch pernicious treatiſes; and I hold it mine to warn the public of a late poem entitled, the Rape of the Lock; which I ſhall demonſtrate to be of this nature.

It is a common and juſt obſervation, that, when the meaning of any thing is dubious, one can no way better judge of the true intent of it, than by

conſidering who is the author, what is his character in general, and his diſpoſition in particular.

Now that the author of this poem is a reputed papiſt, is well known; and that a genius ſo capable of doing ſervice to that cauſe may have been corrupted in the courſe of his education by jeſuits or others, is juſtly very much to be ſuſpected; notwithſtanding that ſeeming coolneſs and moderation, which he has been (perhaps artfully) reproached with by thoſe of his own perſuaſion. They are ſenſible, that this nation is ſecured by good and wholeſome laws to prevent all evil practices of the church of Rome; particularly the publication of books, that may in any ſort propagate that doctrine: their authors are therefore obliged to couch their deſigns the deeper; and though I cannot aver the intention of this gentleman was directly to ſpread popiſh doctrines, yet it comes to the ſame point if he touch the government: for the court of Rome knows very well, that the church at this time is ſo firmly founded on the ſtate, that the only way to ſhake the one, is, by attacking the other.

What confirms me in this opinion is an accidental diſcovery I made of a very artful piece of management among his popiſh friends and abettors, to hide his whole deſign upon the government, by taking all the characters upon themſelves.

Upon the day that this poem was publiſhed, it was my fortune to ſtep into the Cocoa-tree, where a certain gentleman was railing very liberally at the author, with a paſſion extremely well counterfeited,

feited, for having (as he ſaid) reflected upon him in the character of Sir Plume. Upon his going out, I enquired who he was, and they told me he was a Roman catholic knight.

I was the ſame evening at Will's, and ſaw a circle round another gentleman, who was railing in like manner, and ſhewing his ſnuff-box and cane to prove he was ſatirized in the ſame character. I aſked this gentleman's name, and was told he was a Roman catholic lord.

A day or two after I happened to be in company with the young lady, to whom the poem is dedicated. She alſo took up the character of Belinda with much frankneſs and good humour, though the author has given us a hint, in his * dedication, that he meant ſomething farther. This lady is alſo a Roman catholic. At the ſame time others of the characters were claimed by ſome perſons in the room; and all of them Roman catholics.

But to proceed to the work itſelf.

In all things which are intricate, as allegories in their own nature are, and eſpecially thoſe that are induſtriouſly made ſo, it is not to be expected we ſhould find the clue at firſt ſight: but when once we have laid hold on that, we ſhall trace this our author through all the labyrinths, doublings, and turnings of his intricate compoſition.

* "The character of Belinda (as it is here managed) reſembles "you in nothing but beauty." Dedication to the Rape of the Lock.

Firſt then let it be obſerved, that in the moſt demonſtrative ſciences ſome *poſtulata* are to be granted, upon which the reſt is naturally founded.

The only *poſtulatum* or conceſſion which I deſire to be made me, is, that by the lock is meant

The BARRIER TREATY*.

I. Firſt then, I ſhall diſcover that Belinda repreſents Great Britain, or (which is the ſame thing) her late majeſty. This is plainly ſeen in his deſcription of her:

On her white breaſt a ſparkling croſs ſhe bore:

alluding to the antient name of Albion, from her white cliffs, and to the croſs which is the enſign of England.

II. The baron, who cuts off the lock, or barrier treaty, is the E. of Oxford.

III. Clariſſa, who lent the ſciſſars, my lady Maſham.

IV. Thaleſtris, who provokes Belinda to reſent the loſs of the lock, or treaty, the ducheſs of Marlborough.

V. Sir Plume, who is moved by Thaleſtris to redemand it of Great Britain, prince Eugene, who came hither for that purpoſe.

There are ſome other inferior characters, which we ſhall obſerve upon afterwards; but I ſhall firſt explain the foregoing.

* For a full account of the political tranſactions relating to this treaty, ſee The Conduct of the Allies, and Remarks on the Barrier Treaty,

The

The firſt part of the Baron's character is his being adventurous, or enterprizing, which is the common epithet given to the earl of Oxford by his enemies. The prize he aſpires to is the treaſury, in order to which he offers a ſacrifice:

——an altar built
Of twelve vaſt French romances neatly gilt.

Our author here takes occaſion malicioufly to inſinuate this ſtateſman's love to France; repreſenting the books he chiefly ſtudies to be vaſt French romances: theſe are the vaſt proſpects from the friendſhip and alliance of France, which he ſatyrically calls romances; hinting thereby, that theſe promiſes and proteſtations were no more to be relied on than thoſe idle legends. Of theſe he is ſaid to build an altar; to intimate that the foundation of his ſchemes and honours was fixed upon the French romances above-mentioned.

A fan, a garter, half a pair of gloves.

One of the things he ſacrifices is a fan; which, both for its gaudy ſhow and perpetual flutt'ring, has been held the emblem of woman: this points at the change of the ladies of the bed-chamber. The garter alludes to the honours he conferred on ſome of his friends; and we may, without ſtraining the ſenſe, call the half pair of gloves a gauntlet, the token of thoſe military employments, which he is ſaid to have ſacrificed to his deſigns. The prize, as I ſaid before, means the treaſury, which he makes his prayer ſoon to obtain, and long to poſſeſs.

The pow'rs gave ear, and granted half his pray'r,
The reſt, the winds diſpers'd in empty air.

In the firſt of theſe lines he gives him the treaſury, and in the laſt ſuggeſts, that he ſhould not long poſſeſs that honour.

That Thaleſtris is the ducheſs of Marlborough, appears both by her nearneſs to Belinda, and by this author's malevolent ſuggeſtion that ſhe is a lover of war.

To arms, to arms, the bold Thaleſtris cries:

but more particularly by ſeveral paſſages in her ſpeech to Belinda upon the cutting off the lock, or treaty. Among other things ſhe ſays, "was it for "this you bound your locks in paper durance?" Was it for this ſo much paper has been ſpent to ſecure the barrier treaty?

Methinks, already I your tears ſurvey;
Already hear the horrid things they ſay,
Already ſee you a degraded toaſt.

This deſcribes the aſperſions under which that good princeſs ſuffered, and the repentance which muſt have followed the diſſolution of that treaty; and particularly levels at the refuſal ſome people made to drink her majeſty's health.

Sir Plume (a proper name for a ſoldier) has all the circumſtances that agree with prince Eugene:

Sir Plume, of amber ſnuff-box juſtly vain,
And the nice conduct of a clouded cane,
With earneſt eyes——

'Tis remarkable, this general is a great taker of ſnuff, as well as towns; his conduct of the clouded cane gives him the honour which is ſo juſtly his due, of an exact conduct in battle, which is figured by his cane or truncheon, the enſign of a general. His "earneſt eye," or the vivacity of his look, is ſo particularly remarkable in him, that this character could be miſtaken for no other, had not the author purpoſely obſcured it by the fictitious circumſtances of a "round unthinking face."

Having now explained the chief characters of his human perſons (for there are ſome others that will hereafter fall in by the bye, in the ſequel of this diſcourſe) I ſhall next take in pieces his machinery, wherein the ſatire is wholly confined to miniſters of ſtate.

The Sylphs and Gnomes at firſt ſight appeared to me to ſignify the two contending parties of this nation; for theſe being placed in the air, and thoſe on the earth, I thought agreed very well with the common denomination, high and low. But as they are made to be the firſt movers and influencers of all that happens, it is plain they repreſent promiſcuouſly the heads of parties; whom he makes to be the authors of all thoſe changes in the ſtate, which are generally imputed to the levity and inſtability of the Britiſh nation.

This erring mortals levity may call:
Oh blind to truth! the Sylphs contrive it all.

But of this he has given us a plain demonſtration; for, ſpeaking of theſe ſpirits, he ſays in expreſs terms,

——The chief the care of nations own,
And guard, with arms divine, the Britiſh throne.

And here let it not ſeem odd, if in this myſterious way of writing, we find the ſame perſon, who has before been repreſented by the baron, again deſcribed in the character of Ariel; it being a common way with authors, in this fabulous manner, to take ſuch a liberty. As for inſtance, I have read in St. Evremont, that all the different characters in Petronius, are but Nero in ſo many different appearances. And in the key to the curious romance of Barclay's Argenis, both Poliarchus and Archombrotus mean only the king of Navarre.

We obſerve, in the very beginning of the poem, that Ariel is poſſeſſed of the ear of Belinda; therefore it is abſolutely neceſſary, that this perſon muſt be the miniſter who was neareſt the queen. But whoever would be farther convinced that he meant the treaſurer, may know him by his enſigns in the following line:

He rais'd his azure wand.

His ſitting on the maſt of a veſſel ſhews his preſiding over the South-ſea trade. When Ariel aſſigns to his Sylphs all the poſts about Belinda, what is more clearly deſcribed than the treaſurer's diſpoſing of all the places in the kingdom, and particularly about her majeſty? But let us hear the lines:

——Ye ſpirits, to your charge repair,
The fluttering fan be Zephyretta's care;

The

The drops to thee, Brillante, we conſign,
And, Momentilla, let the watch be thine:
Do thou, Criſpiſſa, tend her fav'rite lock.

He has here particularized the ladies and women of the bedchamber, the keeper of the cabinet, and her majeſty's dreſſer, and impudently given nick-names to each. To put this matter beyond all diſpute, the Sylphs are ſaid to be wonderous fond of place, in the canto following, where Ariel is perched uppermoſt, and all the reſt take their places ſubordinately under him.

Here again I cannot but obſerve the exceſſive malignity of this author, who could not leave the character of Ariel without the ſame invidious ſtroke which he gave him in the character of the baron before:

Amaz'd, confus'd, he ſaw his pow'r expir'd,
Reſign'd to fate, and with a ſigh retir'd.

being another prophecy that he ſhould reſign his place, which it is probable all miniſters do, with a ſigh.

At the head of the Gnomes he ſets Umbriel, a duſky melancholy ſprite, who makes it his buſineſs to give Belinda the ſpleen; a vile and malicious ſuggeſtion againſt ſome grave and worthy miniſter. The vapours, phantoms, viſions, and the like, are the jealouſies, fears, and cries of danger, that have ſo often affrighted and alarmed the nation. Thoſe who are deſcribed, in the houſe of ſpleen, under thoſe ſeveral fantaſtical forms, are the ſame

whom their ill-willers have ſo often called the whimſical,

The two foregoing ſpirits being the only conſiderable characters of the machinery, I ſhall but juſt mention the Sylph, that is wounded with the ſciſſars at the loſs of the lock; by whom is undoubtedly underſtood my lord Townſhend, who at that time received a wound in his character for making the barrier-treaty, and was cut out of his employment upon the diſſolution of it: but that ſpirit re-unites, and receives no harm; to ſignify that it came to nothing, and his lordſhip had no real hurt by it.

But I muſt not conclude this head of the characters without obſerving, that our author has run through every ſtage of beings in ſearch of topicks for detraction. As he has characteriſed ſome perſons under angels and men, ſo he has others under animals and things inanimate: he has even repreſented an eminent clergyman as a dog, and a noted writer as a tool. Let us examine the former:

——But Shock, who thought ſhe ſlept too long,
Leapt up, and wak'd his miſtreſs with his tongue.
'Twas then, Belinda, if report ſay true,
Thy eyes firſt open'd on a billet-doux.

By this Shock it is manifeſt he has moſt audaciouſly and profanely reflected on Dr. Sacheverel, who leapt up, that is, into the pulpit, and awakened Great Britain with his tongue, that is, with his ſermon, which made ſo much noiſe, and for which

which he has been frequently termed by others of his enemies, as well as by this author, a dog. Or perhaps, by his tongue may be more literally meant his ſpeech at his trial, ſince immediately thereupon, our author ſays, her eyes opened on a billet-doux. Billet-doux being addreſſes to ladies from lovers, may be aptly interpreted thoſe addreſſes of loving ſubjects to her majeſty, which enſued that trial.

The other inſtance is at the end of the third canto:

Steel did the labours of the gods deſtroy,
And ſtrike to duſt th' imperial tow'rs of Troy.
Steel could the works of mortal pride confound,
And hew triumphal arches to the ground.

Here he moſt impudently attributes the demolition of Dunkirk, not to the pleaſure of her majeſty, or of her miniſtry, but to the frequent inſtigations of his friend Mr. Steel. A very artful pun, to conceal his wicked lampoonry!

Having now conſidered the general intent and ſcope of the poem, and opened the characters, I ſhall next diſcover the malice which is covered under the epiſodes, and particular paſſages of it.

The game at ombre is a myſtical repreſentation of the late war, which is hinted by his making ſpades the trump; ſpade in Spaniſh ſignifying a ſword, and being yet ſo painted in the cards of that nation, to which it is well known we owe the original of our cards. In this one place indeed he has unawares paid a compliment to the queen and

her ſucceſs in the war; for Belinda gets the better of the two that play againſt her, viz. the kings of France and Spain.

I do not queſtion but every particular card has its perſon and character aſſigned, which, no doubt, the author has told his friends in private; but I ſhall only inſtance in the deſcription of the diſgrace under which the duke of Marlborough then ſuffered, which is ſo apparent in theſe verſes:

Ev'n mighty Pam, that kings and queens o'erthrew,
And mow'd down armies in the fights of lu,
Sad chance of war! now deſtitute of aid,
Falls undiſtinguiſh'd——

And that the author here had an eye to our modern tranſactions, is very plain, from an unguarded ſtroke towards the end of this game:

And now, as oft in ſome diſtemper'd ſtate,
On one nice trick depends the gen'ral fate.

After the concluſion of the war, the public rejoicings and thankſgivings are ridiculed in the two following lines:

The nymph, exulting, fills with ſhouts the ſky,
The walls, the woods, and long canals reply.

Immediately upon which there follows a malicious inſinuation, in the manner of a prophecy (which we have formerly obſerved this ſeditious writer delights in) that the peace ſhould continue but a ſhort time, and that the day ſhould afterwards be curſed,

curſed, which was then celebrated with ſo much joy:

Sudden theſe honours ſhall be ſnatch'd away,
And curs'd for ever this victorious day.

As the game at ombre is a ſatirical repreſentation of the late war, ſo is the tea-table that enſues, of the council-table, and its conſultations after the peace. By this he would hint, that all the advantages we have gained by our late extended commerce, are only coffee and tea, or things of no greater value. That he thought of the trade in this place, appears by the paſſage, which repreſents the Sylphs particularly careful of the rich brocade; it having been a frequent complaint of our mercers, that French brocades were imported in great quantities. I will not ſay he means thoſe preſents of rich gold ſtuff ſuits, which were ſaid to be made her majeſty by the king of France, though I cannot but ſuſpect that he glances at it.

Here this author (as well as the ſcandalous John Dunton) repreſents the miniſtry, in plain terms, taking frequent cups,

And frequent cups prolong the rich repaſt;

for it is manifeſt he meant ſomething more than common coffee, by his calling it,

Coffee that makes the politician wiſe;

and by telling us, it was this coffee, that

Sent up in vapours to the baron's brain
New ſtratagems——

I ſhall

I ſhall only farther obſerve, that it was at this table the lock was cut off; for where but at the council-board ſhould the barrier treaty be diſſolved?

The enſuing contentions of the parties upon the loſs of that treaty, are deſcribed in the ſquabbles following the rape of the lock; and this he raſhly expreſſes without any diſguiſe,

All ſide in parties——

and here you have a gentleman who ſinks beſide the chair: a plain alluſion to a noble lord, who loſt his chair of preſident of the council.

I come next to the bodkin, ſo dreadful in the hand of Belinda; by which he intimates the Britiſh ſceptre, ſo rever'd in the hand of our late auguſt princeſs. His own note upon this place tells us, he alludes to a ſceptre; and the verſes are ſo plain, they need no remark:

The ſame (his ancient perſonage to deck)
Her great great grandſire wore about his neck
In three ſeal rings, which, after melted down,
Form'd a vaſt buckle for his widow's gown;
Her infant grandame's whiſtle next it grew,
The bells ſhe gingled, and the whiſtle blew;
Then in a bodkin grac'd her mother's hairs,
Which long ſhe wore, and now Belinda wears.

An open ſatire upon hereditary right! The three ſeal rings plainly allude to the three kingdoms.

Theſe

Theſe are the chief paſſages in the battle, by which, as hath before been ſaid, he means the ſquabble of parties. Upon this occaſion he could not end the deſcription without teſtifying his malignant joy at thoſe diſſentions, from which he forms the proſpect that both ſhould be diſappointed, and cries out with triumph, as if it were already accompliſhed,

Behold how oft ambitious aims are croſt,
And chiefs contend till all the prize is loſt.

The lock at length is turned into a ſtar, or the old barrier treaty into a new and glorious peace. This, no doubt, is what the author, at the time he printed this poem, would have been thought to mean; in hopes by that compliment to eſcape the puniſhment for the reſt of this piece. It puts me in mind of a fellow, who concluded a bitter lampoon upon the prince and court of his days, with theſe lines:

God ſave the king, the commons, and the peers,
And grant the author long may wear his ears.

Whatever this author may think of that peace, I imagine it the moſt extraordinary ſtar, that ever appeared in our hemiſphere. A ſtar, that is to bring us all the wealth and gold of the Indies; and from whoſe influence, not Mr. John Partridge alone (whoſe worthy labours this writer ſo ungenerouſly ridicules) but all true Britons may, with no leſs authority than he, prognoſticate the fall of Lewis in the reſtraint of the exorbitant power of France, and

and the fate of Rome in the triumphant condition of the church of England.

We have now conſidered this poem in its political view, wherein we have ſhewn, that it hath two different walks of ſatire; the one in the ſtory itſelf, which is a ridicule on the late tranſactions in general; the other in the machinery, which is a ſatire on the miniſters of ſtate in particular. I ſhall now ſhew that the ſame poem, taken in another light, has a tendency to popery, which is ſecretly inſinuated through the whole.

In the firſt place, he has conveyed to us the doctrine of guardian angels and patron ſaints in the machinery of his Sylphs, which being a piece of popiſh ſuperſtition that hath been exploded ever ſince the reformation, he would revive under this diſguiſe. Here are all the particulars which they believe of thoſe beings, which I ſhall ſum up in a few heads.

1ſt. The ſpirits are made to concern themſelves with all human actions in general.

2dly. A diſtinct guardian ſpirit or patron is aſſigned to each perſon in particular:

Of theſe am I, who thy protection claim,
A watchful ſprite——

3dly. They are made directly to inſpire dreams, viſions, and revelations.

Her guardian Sylph prolong'd her balmy reſt,
'Twas he had ſummon'd to her ſilent bed
The morning dream——

4thly,

4thly. They are made to be ſubordinate in different degrees, ſome preſiding over others. So Ariel has his ſeveral under-officers at command:

Superior by the head was Ariel plac'd.

5thly. They are employed in various offices, and each hath his office aſſigned him:

Some in the fields of pureſt æther play,
And baſk and whiten in the blaze of day;
Some guide the courſe, &c.

6thly. He hath given his ſpirits the charge of the ſeveral parts of dreſs; intimating thereby that the ſaints preſide over the ſeveral parts of human bodies. They have one ſaint to cure the tooth-ach, another the gripes, another the gout, and ſo of the reſt.

The flutt'ring fan be Zephyretta's care,
The drops to thee, Brillante, we conſign, &c.

7thly. They are repreſented to know the thoughts of men:

As on the noſegay in her breaſt reclin'd,
He watch'd th' ideas riſing in her mind.

8thly. They are made protectors even to animal and irrational beings:

Ariel himſelf ſhall be the guard of Shock.

So St. Anthony preſides over hogs, &c.

9thly. They are made patrons of whole kingdoms and provinces:

Of theſe the chief the care of nations own.

So St. George is imagined by the papiſts to defend England; St. Patrick, Ireland; St. James, Spain; &c. Now what is the conſequence of all this? By granting that they have this power, we muſt be brought back again to pray to them.

The toilette is an artful recommendation of the maſs, and pompous ceremonies of the church of Rome. The unveiling of the altar, the ſilver vaſes upon it; being robed in white, as the prieſts are upon the chief feſtivals; and the head uncovered, are manifeſt marks of this:

A heavenly image in the glaſs appears,
To that ſhe bends——

plainly denotes image worſhip.

The goddeſs, who is decked with treaſures, jewels, and the various offerings of the world, manifeſtly alludes to the lady of Loretto. You have perfumes breathing from the incenſe pot in the following line:

And all Arabia breathes from yonder box.

The character of Belinda, as we take it in this third view, repreſents the popiſh religion, or the whore of Babylon; who is deſcribed in the ſtate this malevolent author wiſhes for, coming forth in all her glory upon the Thames, and overſpreading the whole nation with ceremonies:

Not

Not with more glories in th' ætherial plain
The Sun firſt riſes o'er the purple main,
Than iſſuing forth, the rival of his beams
Launch'd on the boſom of the ſilver Thames.

She is dreſſed with a croſs on her breaſt, the enſign of popery, the adoration of which is plainly recommended in the following lines:

On her white breaſt a ſparkling croſs ſhe wore,
Which Jews might kiſs, and infidels adore.

Next he repreſents her as the univerſal church, according to the boaſts of the papiſts:

And like the Sun ſhe ſhines on all alike.

After which he tells us,

If to her ſhare ſome female errors fall,
Look on her face, and you'll forget them all.

Though it ſhould be granted ſome errors fall to her ſhare, look on the pompous figure ſhe makes throughout the world, and they are not worth regarding. In the ſacrifice following you have theſe two lines:

For this, ere Phœbus roſe, he had implor'd
Propitious Heav'n, and ev'ry pow'r ador'd.

In the firſt of them he plainly hints at their riſing to matins; in the ſecond, by adoring every power, the invocation of ſaints.

Belinda's viſits are deſcribed with numerous wax-lights, which are always uſed in the ceremonial part of the Romiſh worſhip:

——Viſits

——Viſits ſhall be paid on ſolemn days,
When num'rous wax-lights in bright order blaze.

The lunar ſphere he mentions opens to us their purgatory, which is ſeen in the following line:

Since all things loſt on earth are treaſur'd there.

It is a popiſh doctrine, that ſcarce any perſon quits this world, but he muſt touch at purgatory in his way to heaven; and it is here alſo repreſented as the treaſury of the Romiſh church. Nor is it much to be wondered at, that the moon ſhould be purgatory, when a learned divine hath in a late treatiſe proved the ſun to be hell *.

I ſhall now, before I conclude, deſire the reader to compare this key with thoſe upon any other pieces, which are ſuppoſed to have been ſecret ſatires upon the ſtate, either ancient or modern; in particular with the keys to Petronius Arbiter, Lucian's true hiſtory, Barclay's Argenis, and Rabelais's Garagantua; and I doubt not he will do me the juſtice to acknowledge, that the explanations here laid down, are deduced as naturally, and with as little violence, both from the general ſcope and bent of the work, and from the ſeveral particulars: furthermore, that they are every way as conſiſtent and undeniable, every way as candid, as any modern interpretations of either party on the conduct and writings of the other. And I appeal to the moſt eminent and able ſtate decypherers themſelves, if, according to their art, any thing can be more fully proved, or more ſafely ſworn to?

* The Reverend Dr. Swinden.

To

To ſum up my whole charge againſt this author in a few words: he has ridiculed both the preſent miniſtry and the laſt; abuſed great ſtateſmen and great generals; nay, the treaties of whole nations have not eſcaped him, nor has the royal dignity itſelf been omitted in the progreſs of his ſatire; and all this he has done juſt at the meeting of a new parliament. I hope a proper authority may be made uſe of to bring him to condign puniſhment. In the mean while I doubt not, if the perſons moſt concerned would but order Mr. Bernard Lintot, the printer and publiſher of this dangerous piece, to be taken into cuſtody and examined, many farther diſcoveries might be made both of this poet's and abettor's ſecret deſigns, which are doubtleſs of the utmoſt importance to the government.

MEMOIRS OF P. P.

CLERK OF THIS PARISH.

ADVERTISEMENT.

The original of the following extraordinary treatiſe conſiſted of two large volumes in folio; which might juſtly be intitled, "The Importance of a Man to himſelf:" but, as it can be of very little uſe to any body beſides, I have contented myſelf to give only this ſhort abſtract of it, as a taſte of the true ſpirit of memoir-writers.

IN the name of the Lord. Amen. I P. P. by the grace of God, clerk of this pariſh, writeth this hiſtory.

Ever ſince I arrived at the age of diſcretion, I had a call to take upon me the function of a pariſh-clerk: and to that end, it ſeemed unto me meet and profitable to aſſociate myſelf with the pariſh-clerks of this land; ſuch I mean as were right worthy in their calling, men of a clear and ſweet voice, and of becoming gravity.

Now it came to paſs, that I was born in the year of our Lord *Anno Domini* 1655, the year wherein our worthy benefactor eſquire Bret did add one bell to the ring of this pariſh. So that it hath been wittily ſaid, "that one and the ſame day did give

" to this our church two rare gifts, its great bell " and its clerk."

Even when I was at ſchool, my miſtreſs did ever extol me above the reſt of the youth, in that I had a laudable voice. And it was furthermore obſerved, that I took a kindly affection unto that black letter, in which our bibles are printed. Yea, often did I exerciſe myſelf in ſinging godly-ballads, ſuch as the lady and death, the children in the wood, and chevy-chace; and not like other children, in lewd and trivial ditties. Moreover, while I was a boy, I always adventured to lead the pſalm next after maſter William Harris, my predeceſſor, who (it muſt be confeſſed to the glory of God) was a moſt excellent pariſh-clerk in that his day.

Yet be it acknowledged, that at the age of ſixteen I became a company-keeper, being led into idle converſation by my extraordinary love to ringing; inſomuch that in a ſhort time I was acquainted with every ſet of bells in the whole country: neither could I be prevailed upon to abſent myſelf from wakes, being called thereunto by the harmony of the ſteeple. While I was in theſe ſocieties, I gave myſelf up to unſpiritual paſtimes, ſuch as wreſtling, dancing, and cudgel-playing; ſo that I often returned to my father's houſe with a broken pate. I had my head broken at Milton by Thomas Wyat, as we played a bout or two for a hat, that was edged with ſilver galloon: but in the year following I broke the head of Henry Stubbs, and obtained a hat not inferior to the former. At Yelverton I encountered George Cummins, weaver,

and behold my head was broken a ſecond time! at the wake of Waybrook I engaged William Simkins, tanner, when lo, thus was my head broken a third time, and much blood trickled therefrom. But I adminiſtred to my comfort, ſaying within myſelf, "what man is there, howſoever dextrous in any "craft, who is for aye on his guard?" A week after I had a baſe-born child laid unto me; for in the days of my youth I was looked upon as a follower of venereal fantaſies: thus was I led into ſin by the comelineſs of Suſanna Smith, who firſt tempted me and then put me to ſhame; for indeed ſhe was a maiden of a ſeducing eye, and pleaſant feature. I humbled myſelf before the juſtice, I acknowledged my crime to our curate, and to do away mine offences and make her ſome atonement, was joined to her in holy wedlock on the ſabbath day following.

How often do thoſe things which ſeem unto us misfortunes, redound to our advantage! for the miniſter (who had long looked on Suſanna as the moſt lovely of his pariſhioners) liked ſo well of my demeanour, that he recommended me to the honour of being his clerk, which was then become vacant by the deceaſe of good maſter William Harris.

[Here ends the firſt chapter; after which follow fifty or ſixty pages of his amours in general, and that particular one with Suſanna his preſent wife; but I proceed to chapter the ninth.

No

No ſooner was I elected into mine office, but I layed aſide the powdered gallantries of my youth, and became a new man. I conſidered myſelf as in ſome wiſe of eccleſiaſtical dignity, ſince by wearing a band, which is no ſmall part of the ornament of our clergy, I might not unworthily be deemed, as it were, a ſhred of the linen veſtment of Aaron.

Thou mayeſt conceive, O reader, with what concern I perceived the eyes of the congregation fixed upon me, when I firſt took my place at the feet of the prieſt. When I raiſed the pſalm, how did my voice quaver for fear! and when I arrayed the ſhoulders of the miniſter with the ſurplice, how did my joints tremble under me! I ſaid within myſelf, "remember, Paul, thou ſtandeſt before men "of high worſhip, the wiſe Mr. juſtice Freeman, "the grave Mr. juſtice Thompſon, the good lady "Jones, and the two virtuous gentlewomen her "daughters; nay the great Sir Thomas Truby, "knight and baronet, and my young maſter the "eſquire, who ſhall one day be lord of this ma-"nor." Notwithſtanding which, it was my good hap to acquit myſelf to the good liking of the whole congregation; but the Lord forbid I ſhould glory therein.

[The next chapter contains an account how he diſcharged the ſeveral duties of his office; in particular he inſiſts on the following:]

I was determined to reform the manifold corrupti ons and abuſes, which had crept into the church.

Firſt, I was eſpecially ſevere in whipping forth dogs from the temple, excepting the lap-dog of the good widow Howard, a ſober dog which yelped not, nor was there offence in his mouth.

Secondly, I did even proceed to moroſeneſs, though ſore againſt my heart, unto poor babes, in tearing from them the half-eaten apples, which they privily munched at church. But verily it pitied me, for I remembered the days of my youth.

Thirdly, with the ſweat of my own hands, I did make plain and ſmooth the dogs ears throughout our great bible.

Fourthly, the pews and benches, which were formerly ſwept but once in three years, I cauſed every Saturday to be ſwept with a beſom and trimmed.

Fifthly and laſtly, I cauſed the ſurplice to be neatly darned, waſhed, and laid in freſh lavender (yea, and ſometimes to be ſprinkled with roſe-water) and I had great laud and praiſe from all the neighbouring clergy, foraſmuch as no pariſh kept the miniſter in cleaner linen.

[Notwithſtanding theſe his public cares, in the eleventh chapter he informs us, he did not neglect his uſual occupations as a handycraftſman.]

Shoes, ſaith he, did I make (and, if entreated, mend) with good approbation, faces alſo did I ſhave, and I clipped the hair. Chirurgery alſo I practiſed

practiſed in the worming of dogs; but to bleed adventured I not, except the poor. Upon this my twofold profeſſion there paſſed among men a merry tale, delectable enough to be rehearſed; how that being overtaken in liquor one Saturday evening, I ſhaved the prieſt with Spaniſh blacking for ſhoes inſtead of a waſh-ball, and with lamp-black powdered his peruke. But theſe were ſayings of men, delighting in their own conceits more than in the truth. For it is well known, that great was my ſkill in theſe my crafts; yea, I once had the honour of trimming Sir Thomas himſelf without fetching blood. Furthermore, I was ſought unto to geld the lady Frances her ſpaniel, which was wont to go aſtray: he was called Toby, that is to ſay Tobias. And thirdly, I was entruſted with a gorgeous pair of ſhoes of the ſaid lady to ſet an heel piece thereon; and I received ſuch praiſe therefore, that it was ſaid all over the pariſh, I ſhould be recommended unto the king to mend ſhoes for his majeſty: whom God preſerve! Amen.

[The reſt of this chapter I purpoſely omit, for it muſt be owned, that when he ſpeaks as a ſhoemaker he is very abſurd. He talks of Moſes's pulling off his ſhoes, of tanning the hides of the bulls of Baſan, of Simon the tanner, *&c.* and takes up four or five pages to prove, that when the apoſtles were inſtructed to travel without ſhoes, the precept did not extend to their ſucceſſors.]

[The next relates how he diſcovered a thief with a bible and key, and experimented verſes of the pſalms, that had cured agues.]

[I paſs over many others, which inform us of pariſh affairs only, ſuch as of the ſucceſſion of curates; a liſt of the weekly texts; what pſalms he choſe on proper occaſions; and what children were born and buried: the laſt of which articles he concludes thus:]

That the ſhame of women may not endure, I ſpeak not of baſtards; neither will I name the mothers, although thereby I might delight many grave women of the pariſh: even her who hath done penance in the ſheet will I not mention, foraſmuch as the church hath been witneſs of her diſgrace: let the father, who hath made due compoſition with the church-wardens to conceal his infirmity, reſt in peace; my pen ſhall not bewray him, for I alſo have ſinned.

[The next chapter contains what he calls a great revolution in the church, part of which I tranſcribe.]

Now was the long expected time arrived, when the pſalms of king David ſhould be hymned unto the ſame tunes, to which he played them upon his harp; ſo was I informed by my ſinging-maſter, a man right cunning in pſalmody. Now was our over-

over-abundant quaver and trilling done away, and in lieu thereof was inſtituted the ſol-fa, in ſuch guiſe as is ſung in his majeſty's chapel. We had London ſinging-maſters ſent into every pariſh, like unto exciſemen; and I alſo was ordained to adjoin myſelf unto them, though an unworthy diſciple, in order to inſtruct my fellow-pariſhioners in this new manner of worſhip. What though they accuſed me of humming through the noſtril as a ſackbut; yet would I not forego that harmony, it having been agreed by the worthy pariſh-clerks of London ſtill to preſerve the ſame. I tutored the young men and maidens to tune their voices as it were a pſaltery, and the church on the Sunday was filled with theſe new hallelujahs.

[Then follow full ſeventy chapters, containing an exact detail of the law-ſuits of the parſon and his pariſhioners concerning tythes, and near a hundred pages left blank with an earneſt deſire that the hiſtory might be completed by any of his ſucceſſors, in whoſe time theſe ſuits ſhould be ended.]

[The next contains an account of the briefs read in the church, and the ſums collected upon each. For the reparation of nine churches, collected at nine ſeveral times, 2 s. and 7 d. ¼. For fifty families ruined by fire, 1 s. ½. For an inundation, a king Charles's groat, given by lady Frances, &c.]

[In the next he laments the diſuſe of wedding-ſermons, and celebrates the benefits ariſing from thoſe

thoſe at funerals, concluding with theſe words: Ah! let not the relations of the deceaſed grudge the ſmall expence of a hat-band, a pair of gloves, and ten ſhillings, for the ſatisfaction they are ſure to receive from a pious divine, that their father, brother, or boſom wife are certainly in heaven.]

[In another he draws a panegyric on one Mrs. Margaret Wilkins; but, after great encomiums, concludes, that notwithſtanding all, ſhe was an unprofitable veſſel, being a barren woman, and never once having furniſhed God's church with a chriſtening.]

[We find in another chapter, how he was much ſtaggered in his belief, and diſturbed in his conſcience by an Oxford ſcholar, who had proved to him by logick, that animals might have rational, nay, immortal ſouls; but how he was again comforted with the reflection, that if ſo, they might be allowed chriſtian burial, and greatly augment the fees of the pariſh.]

[In the two following chapters he is overpowered with vanity. We are told, how he was conſtantly admitted to all the feaſts and banquets of the church officers, and the ſpeeches he there made for the good of the pariſh. How he gave hints to young clergymen to preach; but above all how he gave a text for the 30th of January, which occaſioned a moſt excellent ſermon, the merits of which he takes entirely to himſelf. He gives an account of a conference

ference he had with the vicar concerning the uſe of texts. Let a preacher (ſaith he) conſider the aſſembly before whom he preacheth, and unto them adapt his text. Micah the 3d and 11th affordeth good matter for courtiers and court-ſerving men. "The heads of the land judge for reward, and "the people thereof judge for hire, and the pro-"phets thereof divine for money; yet will they "lean upon the Lord, and ſay, is not the Lord "among us?" Were the firſt miniſter to point out a preacher before the houſe of commons, would not he be wiſe to make choice of theſe words? "give and it ſhall be given unto ye." Or before the lords, "giving no offence that the miniſtry be "not blamed, 2 Cor. vi. 3." Or praiſing the warm zeal of an adminiſtration, "who maketh "his miniſters a flaming fire, Pſal. civ. 4." We omit many others of his texts as too tedious.]

[From this period the ſtyle of the book riſes extremely. Before the next chapter was paſted the effigies of Dr. Sacheverel, and I found the oppoſite page all on a foam with politics.]

We are now (ſays he) arrived at that celebrated year, in which the church of England was tried in the perſon of Dr. Sacheverel. I had ever the intereſt of our high-church at heart, neither would I at any ſeaſon mingle myſelf in the ſocieties of fanaticks, whom I from my infancy abhorred more than the heathen or gentile. It was in theſe days I bethought myſelf, that much profit might accrue unto our

our pariſh, and even unto the nation, could there be aſſembled together a number of choſen men of the right ſpirit, who might argue, refine, and define, upon high and great matters. Unto this purpoſe I did inſtitute a weekly aſſembly of divers worthy men, at the Roſe and Crown alehouſe, over whom myſelf (though unworthy) did preſide. Yea, I did read to them the Poſt-boy of Mr. Roper, and the written letter of Mr. Dyer, upon which we communed afterwards among ourſelves.

Our ſociety was compoſed of the following perſons: Robert Jenkins, farrier; Amos Turner, collar-maker; George Pilcocks, late exciſeman; Thomas White, wheelwright; and myſelf. Firſt, of the firſt, Robert Jenkins.

He was a man of bright parts and ſhrewd conceit, for he never ſhoed an horſe of a Whig or a fanatick, but he lamed him ſorely.

Amos Turner, a worthy perſon, rightly eſteemed among us for his ſufferings, in that he had been honoured in the ſtocks for wearing an oaken bough.

George Pilcocks, a ſufferer alſo; of zealous and laudable freedom of ſpeech, inſomuch that his occupation had been taken from him.

Thomas White, of good repute likewiſe, for that his uncle by the mother's ſide had formerly been ſervitor at Maudlin college, where the glorious Sacheverel was educated.

Now were the eyes of all the pariſh upon theſe our weekly councils. In a ſhort ſpace the miniſter came among us; he ſpake concerning us and our councils

councils to a multitude of other miniſters at the viſitation, and they ſpake thereof unto the miniſters at London, ſo that even the biſhops heard and marvelled thereat. Moreover Sir Thomas, member of parliament, ſpake of the ſame unto other members of parliament, who ſpake thereof unto the peers of the realm. Lo! thus did our counſels enter into the hearts of our generals and our law-givers; and from henceforth, even as we deviſed, thus did they.

[After this, the book is turned on a ſudden from his own life to a hiſtory of all the public tranſactions of Europe, compiled from the news-papers of thoſe times. I could not comprehend the meaning of this, till I perceived at laſt, to my no ſmall aſtoniſhment, that all the meaſures of the four laſt years of the queen, together with the peace at Utrecht, which have been uſually attributed to the earl of Oxford, duke of Ormond, lords Harcourt and Bolingbroke, and other great men, do here moſt plainly appear to have been wholly owing to Robert Jenkins, Amos Turner, George Pilcocks, Thomas White, but above all, P. P.

The reader may be ſure I was very inquiſitive after this extraordinary writer, whoſe work I have here abſtracted. I took a journey into the country on purpoſe; but could not find the leaſt trace of him: till by accident I met an old clergyman, who ſaid he could not be poſitive, but thought it might be one Paul Philips, who had been dead about twelve years. And upon enquiry, all we could learn of that perſon from the neighbourhood, was,

that he had been taken notice of for ſwallowing loaches, and remembered by ſome people by a black and white cur with one ear, that conſtantly followed him.]

[In the church-yard I read his epitaph, ſaid to be written by himſelf.]

O reader, if that thou canſt read,
Look down upon this ſtone;
Do all we can, death is a man
That never ſpareth none.

Law is a Bottomleſs Pit:

OR, THE

HISTORY

OF

JOHN BULL.

PUBLISHED FROM

A Manuſcript found in the Cabinet of the famous Sir H. Poleſworth, in the Year 1712.

THE

HISTORY

OF

JOHN BULL.

CHAP. I.

The occaſion of the law-ſuit.

I NEED not tell you of the great quarrels, that have happen'd in our neighbourhood ſince the death of the late ~~lord~~ Strutt *; how the parſon †, and a ‡ cunning attorney, got him to ſettle his eſtate upon his couſin § Philip Baboon to the great diſappointment of his couſin || eſquire South. Some ſtick not to ſay, that the parſon and the attorney forged a will, for which they were well paid by the family of the Baboons: let that be as it will, it is matter of fact, that the honour and eſtate have continued ever ſince in the perſon of Philip Baboon.

* Charles II. of Spain died without iſſue, and

† Card. Portocarero and the

‡ Marſhal of Harcourt, employed, as is ſuppoſed, by the Houſe of Bourbon, prevailed upon him to make a will, by which he ſettled the ſucceſſion of the Spaniſh monarchy upon

§ Philip of Bourbon Duke of Anjou, though his right had by the moſt ſolemn renunciations been barred in favour of

|| the Archduke Charles of Auſtria;

You know, that the lord Strutts have for many years been poſſeſs'd of a very great landed eſtate, well-condition'd, wooded, watered, with coal, ſalt, tin, copper, iron, &c. all within themſelves; that it has been the misfortune of that family to be the property of their ſtewards, tradeſmen, and inferior ſervants, which has brought great incumbrances upon them; at the ſame time, their not abating of their expenſive way of living has forced them to mortgage their beſt manors: it is credibly reported, that the butchers and bakers bill of a lord Strutt, that lived two hundred years ago, are not yet paid.

When Philip Baboon came firſt to the poſſeſſion of the lord Strutt's eſtate, his tradeſmen, as is uſual upon ſuch occaſions, waited upon him to wiſh him joy and beſpeak his cuſtom: the two chief were * John Bull the clothier, and † Nic. Frog the linen-draper: They told him, that the Bulls and Frogs had ſerved the lord Strutts with drapery-ware for many years; that they were honeſt and fair-dealers; that their bills had never been queſtioned; that the lord Strutts lived generouſly, and never uſed to dirty their fingers with pen, ink, and counters; that his lordſhip might depend upon their honeſty; that they would uſe him as kindly, as they had done his predeceſſors. The young lord ſeemed to take all in good part, and diſmiſſed them with a deal of ſeeming content,

* the Engliſh and

† the Dutch congratulated Philip upon a ſucceſſion, which they were not able to prevent: but to diſappoint the ambition of

aſſuring

aſſuring them he did not intend to change any of the honourable maxims of his predeceſſors.

CHAP. II.

How Bull *and* Frog *grew jealous, that the lord* Strutt *intended to give all his cuſtom to his grandfather* Lewis Baboon *.

IT happened unfortunately for the peace of our neighbourhood, that this young lord had an old cunning rogue, or (as the Scots call it) *a falſe loon*, of a grandfather, that one might juſtly call a Jack of all trades †; ſometimes you would ſee him behind his counter ſelling broad-cloth, ſometimes meaſuring linen; next day he would be dealing in mercery-ware; high heads, ribbons, gloves, fans, and lace, he underſtood to a nicety; Charles Mather could not bubble a young beau better with a toy; nay, he would deſcend even to the ſelling of tape, garters, and ſhoebuckles: when ſhop was ſhut up, he would go about the neighbourhood, and earn half a crown by teaching the young men and maids to dance. By theſe methods he had acquired immenſe riches, which he uſed to ſquander ‡ away at back-ſword, quarter-ſtaff, and cudgel-play, in which he took great pleaſure, and chal-

* Lewis the XIV, and hinder the French nation, whoſe
† trade and character are thus deſcribed, and whoſe king had a
‡ ſtrong diſpoſition to war, from becoming too potent, an alliance was formed to "procure a reaſonable ſatisfaction to the houſe "of Auſtria for its pretenſions to the Spaniſh ſucceſſion, and ſuf-"ficient

lenged all the country. You will ſay it is no wonder if Bull and Frog ſhould be jealous of this fellow. "It is not impoſſible (ſays Frog to Bull) but this "old rogue will take the management of the young "lord's buſineſs into his hands; beſides the raſcal "has good ware, and will ſerve him as cheap as "any body. In that caſe, I leave you to judge "what muſt become of us and our families; we "muſt ſtarve, or turn journeymen to old Lewis "Baboon; therefore, neighbour, I hold it adviſe-"able, that we write to young lord Strutt to know "the bottom of this matter."

CHAP. III.

A copy of Bull *and* Frog's *letter to lord* Strutt.

MY LORD,

I SUPPOSE your lordſhip knows, that the Bulls and the Frogs have ſerved the lord Strutts with all ſorts of drapery-ware time out of mind: and whereas we are jealous, not without reaſon, that your lordſhip intends henceforth to buy of your grandſire old Lewis Baboon; this is to inform your lordſhip, that this proceeding does not ſuit with the circumſtances of our families, who have lived and made a good figure in the world by the generoſity of the lord Strutts. Therefore we think fit to acquaint your lordſhip, that you muſt find ſufficient ſecurity * to us, our heirs and aſſigns, that you

* "ſecurity to England and Holland for their dominions, naviga-"tion, and commerce, and to prevent the union of the two monar-"chies

you will not employ Lewis Baboon; or elſe we will take our remedy at law, clap an action upon you of 20,000l. for old debts, ſeize and diſtrain your goods and chattels, which, conſidering your lordſhip's circumſtances, will plunge you into difficulties, from which it will not be eaſy to extricate yourſelf; therefore we hope, when your lordſhip has better conſidered on it, you will comply with the deſire of

Your loving friends,

JOHN BULL,
NIC. FROG.

Some of Bull's friends adviſed him to take gentler methods with the young lord; but John naturally loved rough play. It is impoſſible to expreſs the ſurprize of the lord Strutt upon the receipt of this letter; he was not fluſh in ready either to go to law, or clear old debts, neither could he find good bail; he offered to bring matters to a friendly accommodation; and promiſed upon his word of honour, that he would not change his drapers; but all to no purpoſe, for Bull and Frog ſaw clearly that old Lewis would have the cheating of him.

" chies France and Spain." To effect theſe purpoſes, queen Anna was by

CHAP. IV.

How Bull *and* Frog *went to law with lord* Strutt *about the premiſes, and were joined by the reſt of the tradeſmen.*

ALL endeavours of accommodation between lord Strutt and his drapers proved vain; jealouſies increaſed, and indeed it was rumoured abroad, that lord Strutt had beſpoke his new liveries of old Lewis Baboon. This coming to Mrs. Bull's * ears, when John Bull came home, he found all his family in an uproar. Mrs. Bull, you muſt know, was very apt to be choleric. "You "ſot, ſays ſhe, you loiter about ale-houſes and ta-"verns, ſpend your time at billiards, ninepins, or "puppet-ſhows, or flaunt about the ſtreets in your "new gilt chariot, never minding me nor your "numerous family. Don't you hear how lord "Strutt has beſpoke his liveries at Lewis Baboon's "ſhop? Don't you ſee how that old fox ſteals "away your cuſtomers, and turns you out of your "buſineſs every day, and you ſit like an idle drone "with your hands in your pockets? Fie upon it! "up man, rouze thyſelf; I'll ſell to my ſhift, be-"fore I'll be ſo uſed by that knave." You muſt think Mrs. Bull had been pretty well tuned up by Frog, who chimed in with her learned harangue. No farther delay now, but to council learned in

* the parliament precipitated into the war as a principal. Among her allies were

the law they go, who unanimouſly aſſured them both of the juſtice and infallible ſucceſs of their law-ſuit.

I told you before, that old Lewis Baboon was a ſort of a Jack of all trades, which made the reſt of the tradeſmen jealous, as well as Bull and Frog; they hearing of the quarrel, were glad of an opportunity of joining againſt old Lewis Baboon, provided that Bull and Frog would bear the charges of the ſuit; even lying Ned, the chimney-ſweeper of Savoy *, and Tom, the Portugal duſtman †, put in their claims; and the cauſe was put into the hands of Humphry Hocus the attorney ‡.

A declaration was drawn up to ſhew "That "Bull and Frog had undoubted right by preſcrip- "tion to be drapers to the lord Strutts; that there "were ſeveral old contracts to that purpoſe; that "Lewis Baboon had taken up the trade of clothier "and draper, without ſerving his time or pur- "chaſing his freedom; that he ſold goods that "were not marketable, without the ſtamp; that "he himſelf was more fit for a bully than a tradeſ- "man, and went about through all the country "fairs, challenging people to fight prizes, wreſt- "ling, and cudgel-play;" and abundance more to this purpoſe.

* the Duke of Savoy and

† the King of Portugal; and

‡ John Churchill, Duke of Marlborough, was appointed general in chief of the confederate army.

CHAP. V.

The true characters of John Bull, Nic. Frog, *and* Hocus.

FOR the better underſtanding the following hiſtory, the reader ought to know, that Bull, in the main, was an honeſt plain-dealing fellow, cholerick, bold, and of a very unconſtant temper; he dreaded not old Lewis, either at back-ſword, ſingle faulchion, or cudgel-play; but then he was very apt to quarrel with his beſt friends, eſpecially if they pretended to govern him: if you flattered him, you might lead him like a child. John's temper depended very much upon the air; his ſpirits roſe and fell with the weather-glaſs. John was quick, and underſtood his buſineſs very well; but no man alive was more careleſs in looking into his accounts, or more cheated by partners, apprentices, and ſervants. This was occaſioned by his being a boon companion, loving his bottle and his diverſion; for, to ſay truth, no man kept a better houſe than John, nor ſpent his money more generouſly. By plain and fair dealing, John had acquired ſome plumbs, and might have kept them, had it not been for his unhappy law-ſuit.

Nic. Frog was a cunning, ſly whoreſon, quite the reverſe of John in many particulars; covetous, frugal; minded domeſtic affairs; would pinch his belly to ſave his pocket; never loſt a farthing by careleſs ſervants, or bad debtors. He did not care much

much for any ſort of diverſions, except tricks of High German artiſts, and *leger-de-main:* no man exceeded Nic. in theſe; yet it muſt be owned, that Nic. was a fair dealer, and in that way acquired immenſe riches.

Hocus was an old cunning attorney; and though this was the firſt conſiderable ſuit that ever he was engaged in, he ſhewed himſelf ſuperior in addreſs to moſt of his profeſſion: he kept always good clerks, he loved money, was ſmooth-tongued, gave good words, and ſeldom loſt his temper: he was not worſe than an infidel, for he provided plentifully for his family; but he loved himſelf better than them all: the neighbours reported, that he was hen-pecked; which was impoſſible by ſuch a mild-ſpirited woman as his wife was.

CHAP. VI.

Of the various ſucceſs of the law-ſuit.

LAW is a bottomleſs pit; it is a cormorant, a harpy, that devours every thing. John Bull was flattered by the lawyers, that his ſuit would not laſt above a year or two at moſt; that before that time he would be in quiet poſſeſſion of his buſineſs: yet ten long years did Hocus ſteer his cauſe through all the meanders of the law, and all the courts. No ſkill, no addreſs was wanting; and, to ſay truth, John did not ſtarve his cauſe; there wanted not yellow-boys to fee counſel, hire witneſſes, and bribe juries: lord Strutt was generally

rally caſt, never had one verdict in his favour; and John was promiſed that the next, and the next, would be the final determination*: but alas! that final determination and happy concluſion was like an inchanted iſland, the nearer John came to it, the farther it went from him: new trials upon new points ſtill aroſe; new doubts, new matters to be cleared; in ſhort, lawyers ſeldom part with ſo good a cauſe, till they have got the oyſter, and their clients the ſhell. John's ready money, book-debts, bonds, mortgages, all went into the lawyers pockets: then John began to borrow money upon Bank-ſtock and Eaſt-India bonds; now and then a farm went to pot: at laſt it was thought a good expedient to ſet up eſquire South's title, to prove the will forged, and diſpoſſeſs Philip lord Strutt at once †. Here again was a new field for the lawyers, and the cauſe grew more intricate than ever. John grew madder and madder; wherever he met any of lord Strutt's ſervants, he tore off their clothes: now and then you would ſee them come home naked, without ſhoes, ſtockings, and linen. As for old Lewis Baboon, he was reduced to his laſt ſhift, though

* The war was carried on againſt France and Spain with great ſucceſs, and a peace might have been concluded upon the principles of the alliance; but a partition of the Spaniſh dominions in favour of the houſe of Auſtria, and an engagement that the ſame perſon ſhould never be king of France and Spain, were not now thought ſufficient.

† It was inſiſted, that the will in favour of Philip was contrary to treaty; and there was a parliamentary declaration for continuing the war, till he ſhould be dethroned.

he

he had as many as any other: his children were reduced from rich ſilks to Doily ſtuffs; his ſervants in rags, and bare-footed: inſtead of good victuals, they now lived upon neck-beef, and bullock's liver: in ſhort, nobody got much by the matter, but the men of law.

CHAP. VII.

How John Bull *was ſo mightily pleaſed with his ſucceſs, that he was going to leave off his trade, and turn lawyer.*

IT is wiſely obſerved by a great philoſopher, that habit is a ſecond nature: this was verified in the caſe of John Bull, who, from an honeſt and plain tradeſman, had got ſuch a haunt about the courts of juſtice, and ſuch a jargon of law-words, that he concluded himſelf as able a lawyer as any that pleaded at the bar, or ſat on the bench: He was overheard one day talking to himſelf after this manner*: "How capriciouſly does fate or chance "diſpoſe of mankind? How ſeldom is that buſi- "neſs allotted to a man, for which he is fitted by "nature? It is plain, I was intended for a man "of law: how did my guardians miſtake my ge- "nius, in placing me, like a mean ſlave, behind a "counter? Bleſs me! what immenſe eſtates theſe "fellows raiſe by the law? Beſides, it is the pro- "feſſion of a gentleman. What a pleaſure is it to

* The manners and ſentiments of the nation became extravagant and chimerical,

"be

" be victorious in a cauſe? to ſwagger at the bar?
" What a fool am I to drudge any more in this woollen
" trade? for a lawyer I was born, and a lawyer I
" will be; one is never too old to learn." All this while John had conned over ſuch a catalogue of hard words, as were enough to conjure up the devil; theſe he uſed to babble indifferently in all companies, eſpecially at coffee-houſes; ſo that his neighbour tradeſmen began to ſhun his company, as a man that was cracked. Inſtead of the affairs of Blackwell-hall, and the price of broad cloth, wool, and baizes, he talks of nothing but actions upon the caſe, returns, capias, alias capias, demurrers, venire facias, replevins, ſuperſedeas's, certioraris, writs of error, actions of trover and converſion, treſpaſſes, precipe's and dedimus. This was matter of jeſt to the learned in law; however, Hocus, and the reſt of the tribe, encouraged John in his fancy, aſſuring him, that he had a great genius for law; that they queſtioned not, but in time he might raiſe money enough by it to reimburſe him all his charges; that if he ſtudied, he would undoubtedly arrive to the dignity of a lord chief juſtice*: as for the advice of honeſt friends and neighbours, John deſpiſed it; he looked upon them as fellows of a low genius, poor groveling mechanics; John reckoned it more honour to have got one favourable verdict, than to have ſold a bale of broad cloth. As for Nic. Frog, to ſay the truth, he was more prudent; for though he followed his

* Hold the balance of power.

law-

aw-ſuit cloſely, he neglected not his ordinary buſineſs, but was both in court and in his ſhop at the proper hours.

CHAP. VIII.

How John *diſcovered that* Hocus *had an intrigue with his wife; and what followed thereupon.*

JOHN had not run on a madding ſo long, had it not been for an extravagant bitch of a wife, whom Hocus perceiving John to be fond of, was reſolved to win over to his ſide. It is a true ſaying, "that the laſt man of the pariſh, that knows "of his cuckoldom, is himſelf." It was obſerved by all the neighbourhood, that Hocus had dealings with John's wife *, that were not ſo much for his honour; but this was perceived by John a little too late: ſhe was a luxurious jade, loved ſplendid equipages, plays, treats, and balls, differing very much from the ſober manners of her anceſtors, and by no means fit for a tradeſman's wife. Hocus fed her extravagancy (what was ſtill more ſhameful) with John's own money. Every body ſaid, that Hocus had a month's mind to her body; be that as it will, it is matter of fact, that upon all occaſions ſhe run out extravagantly on the praiſe of Hocus. When John uſed to be finding fault with his bills, ſhe uſed to reproach him as ungrateful to his greateſt benefactor; one that had taken ſo

* And it was believed, that the general tampered with the parliament,

much pains in his law-ſuit, and retrieved his family from the oppreſſion of old Lewis Baboon. A good ſwinging ſum of John's readieſt caſh went towards building of Hocus's country-houſe *. This affair between Hocus and Mrs. Bull was now ſo open, that all the world were ſcandalized at it; John was not ſo clod-pated, but at laſt he took the hint. The parſon of the pariſh † preaching one day with more zeal than ſenſe againſt adultery ‡, Mrs. Bull told her huſband, that he was a very uncivil fellow to uſe ſuch coarſe language before people of condition; that Hocus was of the ſame mind; and that they would join to have him turned out of his living for uſing perſonal reflections. How do you mean, ſays John, by perſonal reflections? I hope in God, wife, he did not reflect upon you? "No, thank God, my reputa-
"tion is too well eſtabliſhed in the world to receive
"any hurt from ſuch a foul-mouthed ſcoundrel as
"he; his doctrine tends only to make huſbands
"tyrants, and wives ſlaves; muſt we be ſhut up,
"and huſbands left to their liberty? Very pretty

* who ſettled upon him the manor of Woodſtock, and afterwards entailed that, with 5000 l. *per annum*, payable out of the Poſt-office, to deſcend with his honours; over and above this, an immenſe ſum was expended in building Blenheim Houſe. About this time (Nov. 6, 1709)

† Dr. Henry Sacheverel preached a ſermon againſt popular reſiſtance of regal authority.

‡ The houſe of commons voted this ſermon a libel on her majeſty and her government, the revolution, the proteſtant ſucceſſion, and the parliament; they impeached him of high crimes and miſdemeanours; he was ſilenced for three years, and the ſermon burnt by the hangman.

"indeed!

" indeed! a wife muſt never go abroad with a " Platonick to ſee a play or a ball; ſhe muſt never " ſtir without her huſband, nor walk in Spring- " garden with a couſin. I do ſay, huſband, and I " will ſtand by it, that without the innocent free- " doms of life, matrimony would be a moſt into- " lerable ſtate; and that a wife's virtue ought to " be the reſult of her own reaſon, and not of her " huſband's government; for my part, I would " ſcorn a huſband that would be jealous, if he ſaw " a fellow a-bed with me*." All this while, John's blood boiled in his veins: he was now confirmed in all his ſuſpicions; jade, bitch, and whore were the beſt words that John gave her †. Things went from better to worſe, till Mrs. Bull aimed a knife‡ at John, though John threw a bottle§ at her head very brutally indeed‖: and after this, there was nothing but confuſion: bottles, glaſſes, ſpoons, plates, knives, forks, and diſhes flew about like duſt; the reſult of which was, that Mrs. Bull¶ received a bruiſe in her right ſide, of which ſhe died half a year after. The bruiſe impoſthumated, and afterwards turned to a ſtinking ulcer, which made every body ſhy to come near her; yet ſhe

* Theſe proceedings cauſed a great ferment in the nation.

† The houſe complained of being aſperſed and vilified; opprobrious terms were uſed by both parties, and one had recourſe to

‡ military power, becauſe it was aſſaulted by the other with

§ tumult and riot.

‖ The confuſion every day increaſed; the whig or low church party in the houſe of commons began to decline, after much contention and debate

¶ the Parliament was prorogued.

wanted

wanted not the help of many able phyſicians, who attended very diligently, and did what men of ſkill could do: but all to no purpoſe, for her condition was now quite deſperate, all regular phyſicians, and her neareſt relations, having given her over.

CHAP. IX.

How ſome quacks undertook to cure Mrs. Bull *of her ulcer* *.

THERE is nothing ſo impoſſible in nature, but mountebanks will undertake; nothing ſo incredible, but they will affirm: Mrs. Bull's condition was looked upon as deſperate by all the men of art; but there were thoſe, that bragged they had an infallible ointment and plaſter, which being applied to the ſore, would cure it in a few days; at the ſame time they would give her a pill, that would purge off all her bad humours, ſweeten her blood, and rectify her diſturbed imagination. In ſpite of all applications, the patient grew worſe every day; ſhe ſtunk ſo, nobody durſt come within a ſtone's throw of her, except thoſe quacks who attended her cloſe, and apprehended no danger. If one aſked them, how Mrs. Bull did? Better and better, ſaid they; the parts heal, and her conſtitution mends; if ſhe ſubmits to our government, ſhe will be abroad in a little time. Nay, it is reported, that they wrote to her friends in the coun-

* and notwithſtanding many attempts to prolong it, particularly ſome difficulties ſtarted by the Lord

try,

try, that ſhe ſhould dance a jigg next October in Weſtminſter-hall, and that her illneſs had chiefly been owing to bad phyſicians. At laſt, one of them* was ſent for in great haſte, his patient grew worſe and worſe: when he came, he affirmed that it was a groſs miſtake, and that ſhe was never in a fairer way: Bring hither the ſalve, ſays he, and give her a plentiful draught of my cordial. As he was applying his ointments, and adminiſtering the cordial, the patient gave up the ghoſt, to the great confuſion of the quack, and the great joy of Bull and his friends. The quack flung away out of the houſe in great diſorder; and ſwore there was foul play, for he was ſure his medicines were infallible. Mrs. Bull having died without any ſigns of repentance or devotion, the clergy would hardly allow her a chriſtian burial. The relations had once reſolved to ſue John for the murder; but conſidering better of it, and that ſuch a trial would rip up old ſores, and diſcover things not ſo much to the reputation of the deceaſed, they dropt their deſign. She left no will, only there was found in her ſtrong box the following words wrote on a ſcrip of paper, "My curſe on John Bull, and all my poſterity, "if ever they come to any compoſition with the "Lord Strutt."

She left him three daughters, whoſe names were Polemia, Diſcordia, and Uſuria †.

* chancellor, it was diſſolved on the 21 Sept. 1710.

† War, faction, and uſury.

CHAP. X.

Of John Bull's *ſecond wife, and the good advice that ſhe gave him* *.

JOHN quickly got the better of his grief, and ſeeing that neither his conſtitution, or the affairs of his family, could permit him to live in an unmarried ſtate, he reſolved to get him another wife; a couſin of his laſt wife's was propoſed, but John would have no more of the breed: in ſhort, he wedded a ſober country gentlewoman, of a good family, and a plentiful fortune, the reverſe of the other in her temper; not but that ſhe loved money, for ſhe was ſaving, and applied her fortune to pay John's clamorous debts, that the unfrugal methods of his laſt wife, and this ruinous law-ſuit, had brought him into. One day, as ſhe had got her huſband in a good humour, ſhe talked to him after the following manner †: "My dear, ſince I have "been your wife, I have obſerved great abuſes and "diſorders in your family; your ſervants are mu-"tinous and quarrelſome, and cheat you moſt "abominably; your cook-maid is in a combina-"tion with your butcher, poulterer, and fiſh-"monger: your butler purloins your liquor, and "the brewer ſells you hogwaſh; your baker cheats "both in weight and in tale; even your milk-woman

* The new parliament, which was averſe to the war, made

† a repreſentation of the miſmanagement in the ſeveral offices, particularly thoſe for victualling and clothing the navy and army;

"and

" and your nurſery-maid have a fellow-felling;
" your taylor, inſtead of ſhreds, cabbages whole
" yards of cloth; beſides, leaving ſuch long ſcores,
" and not going to market with ready money,
" forces us to take bad ware of the tradeſmen at
" their own price. You have not poſted your
" books theſe ten years; how is it poſſible for a
" man of buſineſs to keep his affairs even in the
" world at this rate? Pray God this Hocus be
" honeſt: would to God you would look over his
" bills, and ſee how matters ſtand between Frog
" and you*: prodigious ſums are ſpent in this
" law-ſuit, and more muſt be borrowed of ſcriven-
" ers and uſurers at heavy intereſt. Beſides, my
" dear, let me beg of you to lay aſide that wild
" project of leaving your buſineſs to turn lawyer,
" for which, let me tell you, nature never deſigned
" you. Believe me, theſe rogues do but flatter,
" that they may pick your pocket; obſerve what a
" parcel of hungry ragged fellows live by your
" cauſe; to be ſure they will never make an end
" on't; I foreſee this haunt you have got about
" the courts, will one day or other bring your
" family to beggary. Conſider, my dear, how
" indecent it is to abandon your ſhop, and follow
" pettifoggers; the habit is ſo ſtrong upon you,
" that there is hardly a plea between two country
" eſquires about a barren acre upon a common, but
" you draw yourſelf in as bail, ſurety, or ſolli-
" citor †." John heard her all this while with

* and of the ſums that had been expended on the war,
† which was however ſtill a favourite with the people.

patience, till ſhe pricked his maggot, and touched him in the tender point; then he broke out into a violent paſſion, "What I not fit for a lawyer! let "me tell you, my clod-pated relations ſpoiled the "greateſt genius in the world, when they bred me "a mechanic. Lord Strutt, and his old rogue of "a grandſire, have found to their coſt, that I can "manage a law-ſuit as well as another." "I "don't deny what you ſay," replied Mrs. Bull, "nor do I call in queſtion your parts; but, I ſay, "it does not ſuit with your circumſtances: you "and your predeceſſors have lived in good repu- "tation among your neighbours by this ſame "clothing-trade, and it were madneſs to leave it "off. Beſides, there are few that know all the "tricks and cheats of theſe lawyers; does not "your own experience teach you, how they have "drawn you on from one term to another, and "how you have danced the round of all the "courts, ſtill flattering you with a final iſſue, and, "for aught I can ſee, your cauſe is not a bit "clearer than it was ſeven years ago." "I will "be damn'd," ſays John, "if I accept of any "compoſition from Strutt or his grandfather; I'll "rather wheel about the ſtreets an engine to grind "knives and ſciſſars; however, I'll take your ad- "vice, and look over my accompts."

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

How John *looked over his attorney's bill.*

WHEN John firſt brought out the bills, the ſurprize of all the family was unexpreſſible at the prodigious dimenſions of them; they would have meaſured with the beſt bale of cloth in John's ſhop. Fees to judges, puny judges, clerks, prothonotaries, philizers, chirographers, under-clerks, proclamators, council, witneſſes, jury-men, marſhals, tipſtaffs, criers, porters; for enrollings, exemplifications, bails, vouchers, returns, caveats, examinations, filings of writs, entries, declarations, replications, recordats, noli proſequis, certioraris, mittimus's, demurrers, ſpecial verdicts, informations, ſcire facias, ſuperſedeas, habeas corpus, coach-hire, treating of witneſſes, &c. "Verily," ſays John, "there are a prodigious number of "learned words in this law; what a pretty ſcience "it is!" "Ay! but huſband, you have paid for "every ſyllable and letter of theſe fine words; "bleſs me, what immenſe ſums are at the bottom "of the account!" John ſpent ſeveral weeks in looking over his bills; and by comparing and ſtating his accounts, he diſcovered, that beſide the extravagance of every article, he had been egregiouſly cheated; that he had paid for council that were never feed, for writs that were never drawn, for dinners that were never dreſſed, and journeys that were never made: In ſhort, that the tradeſ-

men, lawyers, and Frog, had agreed to throw the burden of the law-ſuit upon his ſhoulders.

CHAP. XII.

How John *grew angry, and reſolved to accept a compoſition* * *; and what methods were practiſed by the lawyers for keeping him from it.*

WELL might the learned Daniel Burgeſs ſay, that a law-ſuit is a ſuit for life. He that ſows his grain upon marble, will have many a hungry belly before harveſt. This John felt by woeful experience. John's cauſe was a good milch cow, and many a man ſubſiſted his family out of it. However John began to think it high time to look about him. He had a couſin in the country, one Sir † Roger Bold, whoſe predeceſſors had been bred up to the law, and knew as much of it as any body; but having left off the profeſſion for ſome time, they took great pleaſure in compounding law-ſuits among their neighbours, for which they were the averſion of the gentlemen of the long robe, and at perpetual war with all the country attorneys. John put his cauſe in Sir Roger's hands, deſiring him to make the beſt of it: the news had no ſooner reached the ears of the lawyers, but they were all in an uproar. They brought all the reſt

* When at length peace was thought to be eligible upon more moderate terms, a treaty was entered into by

† Robert Harley, afterward E. of Oxford, who was made treaſurer in the ſtead of the lord Godolphin, and there was now not only a new parliament, but a new miniſtry,

of

of the tradeſmen upon John: * 'Squire South ſwore he was betrayed, that he would ſtarve before he compounded; Frog ſaid he was highly wronged; even lying Ned the chimney-ſweeper, and Tom the duſtman, complained that their intereſt was ſacrificed. The lawyers, ſollicitors, Hocus, and his clerks, were all up in arms, at the news of the compoſition †; they abuſed him and his wife moſt ſhamefully, "You ſilly, awkward, ill-bred, "country-ſow, (quoth one) have you no more "manners than to rail at Hocus, that has ſaved "that clod-pated numſkull'd ninny-hammer of "yours from ruin, and all his family? It is well "known, how he has riſen early and ſat up late "to make him eaſy, when he was ſotting at every "ale-houſe in town. I knew his laſt wife; ſhe "was a woman of breeding, good humour, and "complaiſance; knew how to live in the world: "as for you, you look like a puppet moved by "clock-work: your clothes hang upon you, as "they were upon tenter-hooks, and you come "into a room as you were going to ſteal away a "piſs-pot: get you gone into the country to look "after your mother's poultry, to milk the cows, "churn the butter, and dreſs up noſegays for a "holy-day, and not meddle with matters, which "you know no more of, than the ſign-poſt before "your door: it is well-known, that Hocus had "an eſtabliſhed reputation; he never ſwore an

* the meaſure was oppoſed by the allies and the general:

† the houſe of commons was cenſured as totally ignorant of buſineſs;

" oath, nor told a lie in all his life; he is grateful " to his benefactors, faithful to his friends, liberal " to his dependants, and dutiful to his ſuperiors; " he values not your money more than the duſt " under his feet, but he hates to be abuſed. Once " for all, Mrs. Mynx, leave off talking of Hocus, " or I will pull out thoſe ſaucer eyes of yours, and " make that redſtreak country face look as raw as " an ox-cheek upon a butcher's ſtall: remember, " I ſay, that there are pillories and ducking-ſtools." With this away they flung, leaving Mrs. Bull no time to reply. No ſtone was left unturned to fright John from his compoſition *: ſometimes they ſpread reports at coffee-houſes, that John and his wife were run mad; that they intended to give up houſe, and make over all their eſtate to Lewis Baboon; that John had been often heard talking to himſelf, and ſeen in the ſtreets without ſhoes or ſtockings; that he did nothing from morning till night but beat his ſervants, after having been the beſt maſter alive: as for his wife, ſhe was a meer natural. Sometimes John's houſe was beſet with a whole regiment of attorneys' clerks, bailiffs and bailiffs-followers, and other ſmall retainers of the law, who threw ſtones at his windows, and dirt at himſelf, as he went along the ſtreet. When John complained of want of ready money to carry on his ſuit, they adviſed him to pawn his plate and jewels, and that Mrs. Bull ſhould ſell her linen and wearing-clothes.

* and it was ſaid, that the nation would at laſt be ſacrificed to the ambition of France.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Mrs. Bull's *vindication of the indiſpenſable duty of cuckoldom, incumbent upon wives in caſe of the tyranny, infidelity, or inſufficiency of huſbands: being a full anſwer to the doctor's ſermon againſt adultery* *.

JOHN found daily freſh proofs of the infidelity and bad deſigns of his deceaſed wife; among other things, one day looking over his cabinet, he found the following paper,

IT is evident that matrimony is founded upon an original contract, whereby the wife makes over the right ſhe has by the law of nature to the *concubitus vagus*, in favour of the huſband; by which he acquires the property of all her poſterity. But then the obligation is mutual: and where the contract is broken on one ſide, it ceaſes to bind on the other. Where there is a right, there muſt be a power to maintain it, and to puniſh the offending party. The power I affirm to be that original right, or rather that indiſpenſable duty of cuckoldom, lodged in all wives in the caſes above-mentioned. No wife is bound by any law, to which herſelf has not conſented: all œconomical government is lodged originally in the huſband and wife, the executive part being in the huſband; both have their privileges ſecured to them by law and reaſon;

* The tories repreſentation of the ſpeeches at Sacheverel's trial.

but

but will any man infer from the huſband's being inveſted with the executive power, that the wife is deprived of her ſhare, and that which is the principal branch of it, the original right of cuckoldom? And that ſhe has no remedy left, but *preces & lacrymæ*, or an appeal to a ſupreme court of judicature? No leſs frivolous are the arguments, that are drawn from the general appellations and terms of huſband and wife. A huſband denotes ſeveral different ſorts of magiſtracy, according to the uſages and cuſtoms of different climates and countries. In ſome Eaſtern nations it ſignifies a tyrant, with the abſolute power of life and death: in Turkey it denotes an arbitrary governor, with power of perpetual impriſonment: in Italy it gives the huſband the power of poiſon and padlocks: in the countries of England, France, and Holland, it has a quite different meaning, implying a free and equal government, ſecuring to the wife in certain caſes the liberty of cuckoldom, and the property of pin-money, and ſeparate maintenance. So that the arguments drawn from the terms of huſband and wife are fallacious, and by no means fit to ſupport a tyrannical doctrine, as that of abſolute unlimited chaſtity, and conjugal fidelity.

The general exhortations to chaſtity in wives are meant only for rules in ordinary caſes, but they naturally ſuppoſe three conditions, of ability, juſtice, and fidelity in the huſband: ſuch an unlimited, unconditioned fidelity in the wife could never be ſuppoſed by reaſonable men; it ſeems a reflection upon

upon the ch—rch, to charge her with doctrines that countenance oppreſſion.

This doctrine of the original right of cuckoldom is congruous to the law of nature, which is ſuperior to all human laws, and for that I dare appeal to all wives: it is much to the honour of our Engliſh wives, that they have never given up that fundamental point; and that though in former ages they were muffled up in darkneſs and ſuperſtition, yet that notion ſeemed engraven on their minds, and the impreſſion ſo ſtrong, that nothing could impair it.

To aſſert the illegality of cuckoldom upon any pretence whatſoever, were to caſt odious colours upon the married ſtate, to blacken the neceſſary means of perpetuating families: ſuch laws can never be ſuppoſed to have been deſigned to defeat the very end of matrimony, the propagation of mankind. I call them neceſſary means; for in many caſes what other means are left? Such a doctrine wounds the honour of families; unſettles the titles to kingdoms, honours, and eſtates; for if the actions from which ſuch ſettlements ſpring were illegal, all that is built upon them muſt be ſo too: but the laſt is abſurd, therefore the firſt muſt be ſo likewiſe. What is the cauſe that Europe groans at preſent under the heavy load of a cruel and expenſive war, but the tyrannical cuſtom of a certain nation, and the ſcrupulous nicety of a ſilly queen*, in not exerciſing this indiſpenſable duty of cuckoldom, whereby the king-

* The queen of Ch. II. of Spain, upon whoſe death without iſſue the war broke out.

dom might have had an heir, and a controverted ſucceſſion might have been avoided? Theſe are the effects of the narrow maxims of your clergy, That one muſt not do evil, that good may come of it.

The aſſertors of this indefeaſible right, and *jus divinum* of matrimony, do all in their hearts favour gallants, and the pretenders to married women; for if the true legal foundation of the married ſtate be once ſapped, and inſtead thereof tyrannical maxims introduced, what muſt follow but elopements inſtead of ſecret and peaceable cuckoldom?

From all that has been ſaid, one may clearly perceive the abſurdity of the doctrine of this ſeditious, diſcontented, hot-headed, ungifted, unedifying preacher, aſſerting, That the grand ſecurity of the matrimonial ſtate, and the pillar upon which it ſtands, is founded upon the wife's belief of an abſolute unconditional fidelity to the huſband's bed: by which bold aſſertion he ſtrikes at the root, digs the foundation, and removes the baſis, upon which the happineſs of a married ſtate is built. As for his perſonal reflections, I would gladly know who are thoſe wanton wives he ſpeaks of? who are thoſe ladies of high ſtations, that he ſo boldly traduces in his ſermon? It is pretty plain, whom theſe aſperſions are aimed at, for which he deſerves the pillory, or ſomething worſe.

In confirmation of this doctrine of the indiſpenſable duty of cuckoldom, I could bring the example of the wiſeſt wives in all ages, who by theſe means have preſerved their huſbands' families from ruin and oblivion by want of poſterity: but what has

has been ſaid, is a ſufficient ground for puniſhing this pragmatical parſon.

CHAP. XIV.

The two great parties of wives, the Devotos *and the* Hitts *.

THE doctrine of unlimited chaſtity and fidelity in wives was univerſally eſpouſed by all huſbands; who went about the country, and made the wives ſign papers, ſignifying their utter deteſtation and abhorrence of Mrs. Bull's wicked doctrine of the indiſpenſable duty of cuckoldom. Some yielded, others refuſed to part with their native liberty; which gave riſe to two great parties among the wives, the Devotos and the Hitts. Though it muſt be owned, the diſtinction was more nominal than real; for the Devotos would abuſe freedoms ſometimes; and thoſe who were diſtinguiſhed by the name of Hitts, were often very honeſt. At the ſame time there came out an ingenious treatiſe, with the title of "Good Advice "to Huſbands;" in which they are counſelled not to truſt too much to their wives owning the doctrine of unlimited conjugal fidelity, and ſo to neglect family duty, and a due watchfulneſs over the manners of their wives; that the greateſt ſecurity to huſbands was a vigorous conſtitution, good uſage of their wives, and keeping them from temptation; many huſbands having been ſufferers

* Thoſe who were for or againſt the doctrine of non-reſiſtance.

by

by their truſting too much to general profeſſions, as was exemplified in the caſe of a fooliſh and negligent huſband, who, truſting to the efficacy of this principle, was undone by his wife's elopement from him.

CHAP. XV.

An account of the conference between Mrs. Bull *and* Don Diego.

THE lawyers, as their laſt effort to put off the compoſition, ſent Don Diego* to John. Don Diego was a very worthy gentleman, a friend to John, his mother, and preſent wife; and therefore ſuppoſed to have ſome influence over her: he had been ill-uſed himſelf by John's lawyers; but, becauſe of ſome animoſity to Sir Roger †, was againſt the compoſition ‡: the conference between him and Mrs. Bull was word for word as follows:

DON DIEGO. Is it poſſible, couſin Bull, that you can forget the honourable maxims of the family you are come of, and break your word with three of the honeſteſt, beſt-meaning perſons in the

* Among other obſtacles to the treaty, was the oppoſition of the earl of Nottingham, a tory nobleman, who had great influence in the houſe of commons.

† The cauſe of his animoſity, from which this conduct is ſuppoſed to proceed, was Mr. Harley's being choſen to ſucceed him as principal ſecretary of ſtate, when he was removed from that office in the year 1704.

‡ He expoſtulated againſt the peace with great warmth in the houſe, when the queen was preſent *incog.*

world,

world, eſquire South, Frog, and Hocus, that have ſacrificed their intereſts to yours? It is baſe to take advantage of their ſimplicity and credulity, and leave them in the lurch at laſt.

Mrs. BULL. I am ſure they have left my family in a bad condition, we have hardly money to go to market, and nobody will take our word for ſix-pence. A very fine ſpark this eſquire South! My huſband took him in, a dirty ſnotty-noſed boy; it was the buſineſs of half the ſervants to attend him, the rogue did bawl and make ſuch a noiſe*: ſometimes he fell in the fire and burnt his face, ſometimes broke his ſhins clambering over the benches, often piſſed a-bed, and always came in ſo dirty, as if he had been dragged through the kennel at a boarding-ſchool. He loſt his money at chuck-farthing, ſhuffle-cap, and all-fours; ſold his books, pawned his linen, which we were always forced to redeem. Then the whole generation of him are ſo in love with bagpipes and puppet-ſhews! I wiſh you knew what my huſband has paid at the paſtry-cook's and confectioner's for Naples biſcuit, tarts, cuſtards, and ſweet-meats. All this while my huſband conſidered him as a gentleman of a good family that had fallen into decay, gave him good education, and has ſettled him in a good creditable way of living, having procured him, by his intereſt, one of the beſt places of the country: and what return, think you, does this fine gentleman make us? He will

* Something relating to the manners of a great prince, ſuperſtition, love of operas, ſhows, &c.

hardly

hardly give me or my huſband a good word, or a civil expreſſion: inſtead of Sir and Madam *, (which, though I ſay it, is our due) he calls us Goody and Gaffer ſuch-a-one: ſays, he did us a great deal of honour to board with us; huffs and dings at ſuch a rate, becauſe we will not ſpend the little we have left, to get him the title and eſtate of lord Strutt; and then, forſooth, we ſhall have the honour to be his woollen-drapers. Beſides, eſquire South will be eſquire South ſtill; fickle, proud, and ungrateful. If he behaves himſelf ſo, when he depends on us for his daily bread, can any man ſay, what he will do when he is got above the world?

D. DIEGO. And would you loſe the honour of ſo noble and generous an undertaking? Would you rather accept this ſcandalous compoſition, and truſt that old rogue, Lewis Baboon?

Mrs. BULL. Look you, friend Diego, if we law it on, till Lewis turns honeſt, I am afraid our credit will run low at Blackwell-hall. I wiſh every man had his own; but I ſtill ſay, that lord Strutt's money ſhines as bright, and chinks as well, as eſquire South's. I don't know any other hold, that we tradeſmen have of theſe great folks, but their intereſt; buy dear and ſell cheap, and I'll warrant ye you will keep your cuſtomer. The worſt is, that lord Strutt's ſervants have got ſuch a haunt about that old rogue's ſhop, that it will coſt us many a firkin of ſtrong beer to bring them back

* Something relating to forms and titles.

again;

again; and the longer they are in a bad road, the harder it will be to get them out of it.

D. DIEGO. But poor Frog! what has he done? On my conſcience, if there be an honeſt, ſincere man in the world, it is that Frog.

Mrs. BULL. I think, I need not tell you how much Frog has been obliged to our family from his childhood*; he carries his head high now, but he had never been the man he is, without our help. Ever ſince the commencement of this law-ſuit, it has been the buſineſs of Hocus, in ſharing our expences, to plead for Frog. "Poor Frog," ſays he, "is in hard circumſtances; he has a nu-"merous family, and lives from hand to mouth; "his children don't eat a bit of good victuals from "one year's end to the other, but live upon ſalt "herring, ſowre crud, and borecole; he does his "utmoſt, poor fellow, to keep things even in the "world, and has exerted himſelf beyond his abi-"lity in this law-ſuit; but he really has not "wherewithal to go on. What ſignifies this hun-"dred pounds? place it upon your ſide of the "account; it is a great deal to poor Frog, and a "trifle to you." This has been Hocus's conſtant language, and I am ſure he has had obligations enough to us to have acted another part.

D. DIEGO. No doubt Hocus meant all this for the beſt, but he is a tender-hearted, charitable man; Frog is indeed in hard circumſtances.

* On the other ſide complaint was made of the unequal burden of the war;

Mrs. BULL. Hard circumſtances! I ſwear this is provoking to the laſt degree *. All the time of the law-ſuit, as faſt as I have mortgaged, Frog has purchaſed: from a plain tradeſman with a ſhop, warehouſe, and a country hut, with a dirty fiſh-pond at the end of it, he is now grown a very rich country gentleman, with a noble landed eſtate, noble palaces, manors, parks, gardens, and farms, finer than any we were ever maſter of. Is it not ſtrange, when my huſband diſburſed great ſums every term, Frog ſhould be purchaſing ſome new farm or manor? So that if this law-ſuit laſts, he will be far the richeſt man in his country. What is worſe than all this, he ſteals away my cuſtomers every day; twelve of the richeſt and the beſt have left my ſhop by his perſuaſion, and whom, to my certain knowledge, he has under bonds never to return again: judge you if this be neighbourly dealing.

D. DIEGO. Frog is indeed pretty cloſe in his dealings, but very honeſt: you are ſo touchy, and take things ſo hotly, I am ſure there muſt be ſome miſtake in this.

Mrs. BULL. A plaguy one indeed! You know, and have often told me of it, how Hocus and thoſe rogues kept my huſband John Bull drunk for five years together with punch and ſtrong waters; I am ſure he never went one night ſober to bed, till they got him to ſign the ſtrangeſt deed, that ever you ſaw in your life. The methods they took

* and of the acquiſitions of the Dutch in Flanders: during theſe debates the houſe took in conſideration

to

to manage him I'll tell you another time; at preſent I'll read only the writing.

ARTICLES OF AGREEMENT

BETWIXT

JOHN BULL, Clothier,

AND

NICHOLAS FROG, Linen-draper*.

I. THAT for maintaining the ancient good correſpondence and friendſhip between the ſaid parties, I Nicholas Frog do ſolemnly engage and promiſe to keep peace in John Bull's family; that neither his wife, children, nor ſervants give him any trouble, diſturbance, or moleſtation whatſoever, but to oblige them all to do their duty quietly in their reſpective ſtations: and whereas the ſaid John Bull, from the aſſured confidence that he has in my friendſhip, has appointed me executor of his laſt will and teſtament, and guardian to his children, I do undertake for me, my heirs and aſſigns, to ſee the ſame duly executed and performed, and that it ſhall be unalterable in all its parts by John Bull, or any body elſe: for that

* a treaty which had been concluded by the lord Townſhend at the Hague between the Queen and the States in 1709, for ſecuring the proteſtant ſucceſſion, and for ſettling a barrier for Holland againſt France. And it was reſolved, that ſeveral articles of this treaty were deſtructive to the trade and intereſt of Great Britain, that lord Townſhend had no authority to agree to them, and that he and all thoſe, who adviſed ratifying the treaty, were enemies to their country.

purpoſe it ſhall be lawful and allowable for me to enter his houſe at any hour of the day or night; to break open bars, bolts, and doors, cheſts of drawers, and ſtrong boxes, in order to ſecure the peace of my friend John Bull's family, and to ſee his will duly executed.

II. In conſideration of which kind neighbourly office of Nicholas Frog, in that he has been pleaſed to accept of the aforeſaid truſt, I John Bull having duly conſidered, that my friend Nicholas Frog at this time lives in a marſhy ſoil and unwholeſome air, infeſted with fogs and damps deſtructive of the health of himſelf, wife, and children; do bind and oblige me, my heirs and aſſigns, to purchaſe for the ſaid Nicholas Frog, with the beſt and readieſt of my caſh, bonds, mortgages, goods, and chattels, a landed eſtate, with parks, gardens, palaces, rivers, fields, and outlets, conſiſting of as large extent, as the ſaid Nicholas Frog ſhall think fit. And whereas the ſaid Nicholas Frog is at preſent hemmed in too cloſe by the grounds of Lewis Baboon, maſter of the ſcience of defence, I the ſaid John Bull do oblige myſelf, with the readieſt of my caſh, to purchaſe and incloſe the ſaid grounds, for as many fields and acres as the ſaid Nicholas ſhall think fit: to the intent that the ſaid Nicholas may have free egreſs and regreſs, without lett or moleſtation, ſuitable to the demands of himſelf and family.

III. Furthermore, the ſaid John Bull obliges himſelf to make the country neighbours of Nicholas Frog allot a certain part of yearly rents to pay for the

the repairs of the ſaid landed eſtate, to the intent that his good friend Nicholas Frog may be eaſed of all charges.

IV. And whereas the ſaid Nicholas Frog did contract with the deceaſed lord Strutt about certain liberties, privileges, and immunities, formerly in the poſſeſſion of the ſaid John Bull; I the ſaid John Bull do freely by theſe preſents renounce, quit, and make over to the ſaid Nicholas, the liberties, privileges, and immunities contracted for, in as full a manner, as if they never had belonged to me.

V. The ſaid John Bull obliges himſelf, his heirs and aſſigns, not to ſell one rag of broad or coarſe cloth to any gentleman within the neighbourhood of the ſaid Nicholas, except in ſuch quantities and ſuch rates, as the ſaid Nicholas ſhall think fit.

Signed and ſealed,

JOHN BULL.
NIC. FROG.

[The reading of this paper put Mrs. Bull in ſuch a paſſion, that ſhe fell downright into a fit, and they were forced to give her a good quantity of the ſpirit of hartſhorn before ſhe recovered.]

D. DIEGO. Why in ſuch a paſſion, couſin? conſidering your circumſtances at that time, I don't think this ſuch an unreaſonable contract. You ſee Frog, for all this, is religiouſly true to his bargain; he ſcorns to hearken to any compoſition without your privacy.

Mrs. BULL. You know the contrary *. Read that letter.

[Reads the ſuperſcription.] For Lewis Baboon, maſter of the noble ſcience of defence.

SIR,

I UNDERSTAND, that you are at this time treating with my friend John Bull about reſtoring the lord Strutt's cuſtom, and beſides allowing him certain privileges of parks and fiſh-ponds; I wonder how you, that are a man that knows the world, can talk with that ſimple fellow. He has been my bubble theſe twenty years, and to my certain knowledge underſtands no more of his own affairs, than a child in ſwaddling-clothes. I know he has got a ſort of a pragmatical ſilly jade of a wife, that pretends to take him out of my hands; but you and ſhe both will find yourſelves miſtaken; I'll find thoſe that ſhall manage her; and for him, he dares as well be hanged as make one ſtep in his affairs without my conſent. If you will give me what you promiſed him, I will make all things eaſy, and ſtop the deeds of ejectment againſt lord Strutt: if you will not, take what follows: I ſhall have a good action againſt you, for pretending to rob me of my bubble. Take this warning from,

Your loving friend,

NIC. FROG.

* In the mean time the Dutch were ſecretly negociating with France.

I am

I am told, couſin Diego, you are one of thoſe that have undertaken to manage me, and that you have ſaid you will carry a green bag yourſelf, rather than we ſhall make an end of our law-ſuit: I'll teach them and you too to manage.

D. DIEGO. For God's ſake, madam, why ſo choleric? I ſay this letter is ſome forgery; it never entered into the head of that honeſt man, Nic. Frog, to do any ſuch thing.

Mrs. BULL. I can't abide you: you have been railing theſe twenty years at eſquire South, Frog, and Hocus, calling them rogues and pick-pockets, and now they are turned the honeſteſt fellows in the world. What is the meaning of all this?

D. DIEGO. Pray tell me how you came to employ this Sir Roger in your affairs, and not think of your old friend Diego?

Mrs. BULL. So, ſo, there it pinches. To tell you truth, I have employed Sir Roger in ſeveral weighty affairs, and have found him truſty and honeſt, and the poor man always ſcorned to take a farthing of me. I have abundance that profeſs great zeal, but they are damnable greedy of the pence. My huſband and I are now in ſuch circumſtances, that we muſt be ſerved upon cheaper terms than we have been.

D. DIEGO. Well, couſin, I find I can do no good with you; I am ſorry that you will ruin yourſelf by truſting this Sir Roger.

CHAP. XVI.

How the guardians of the deceaſed Mrs. Bull's *three daughters came to* John, *and what advice they gave him; wherein are briefly treated the characters of the three daughters: alſo* John Bull's *anſwer to the three guardians* *.

I TOLD you in a former chapter, that Mrs. Bull, before ſhe departed this life, had bleſſed John with three daughters. I need not here repeat their names, neither would I willingly uſe any ſcandalous reflections upon young ladies, whoſe reputations ought to be very tenderly handled; but the characters of theſe were ſo well known in the neighbourhood, that it is doing them no injury to make a ſhort deſcription of them.

The eldeſt was a termagant, imperious, prodigal, lewd, profligate wench, as ever breathed †: ſhe uſed to rantipole about the houſe, pinch the children, kick the ſervants, and torture the cats and the dogs; ſhe would rob her father's ſtrong box, for money to give the young fellows that ſhe was fond of: ſhe had a noble air, and ſomething great in her mien, but ſuch a noiſome infectious breath, as threw all the ſervants that dreſſed her into conſumptions; if ſhe ſmelt to the freſheſt noſegay, it would ſhrivel and wither as it had been blighted: ſhe uſed to come home in her cups, and break the

* The debates in parliament were however ſtill continued.

† *Polemia*, War.

china

china and the looking-glaſſes; and was of ſuch an irregular temper, and ſo entirely given up to her paſſion, that you might argue as well with the North wind, as with her ladyſhip: ſo expenſive, that the income of three dukedoms was not enough to ſupply her extravagance. Hocus loved her beſt, believing her to be his own, got upon the body of Mrs. Bull.

The ſecond daughter *, born a year after her ſiſter, was a peeviſh, froward, ill-conditioned creature as ever was, ugly as the devil, lean, haggard, pale, with ſaucer eyes, a ſharp noſe, and hunch-backed: but active, ſprightly, and diligent about her affairs. Her ill complexion was occaſioned by her bad diet, which was coffee, morning, noon, and night: ſhe never reſted quietly a-bed; but uſed to diſturb the whole family with ſhrieking out in her dreams, and plague them next day with interpreting them, for ſhe took them all for goſpel: ſhe would cry out murder, and diſturb the whole neighbourhood; and when John came running down ſtairs, to enquire what the matter was; nothing, forſooth, only her maid had ſtuck a pin wrong in her gown: ſhe turned away one ſervant, for putting too much oil in her ſallad, and another for putting too little ſalt in her water-gruel; but ſuch, as by flattery had procured her eſteem, ſhe would indulge in the greateſt crime. Her father had two coachmen; when one was on the coach-box, if the coach ſwung but the leaſt to one ſide,

* *Diſcordia*, Faction.

ſhe uſed to ſhriek ſo loud, that all the ſtreet concluded ſhe was overturned; but though the other was eternally drunk, and had overturned the whole family, ſhe was very angry with her father for turning him away. Then ſhe uſed to carry tales and ſtories from one to another, till ſhe had ſet the whole neighbourhood together by the ears; and this was the only diverſion ſhe took pleaſure in. She never went abroad, but ſhe brought home ſuch a bundle of monſtrous lies, as would have amazed any mortal but ſuch as knew her: of a whale that had ſwallowed a fleet of ſhips; of the lions being let out of the Tower to deſtroy the proteſtant religion; of the Pope's being ſeen in a brandy-ſhop at Wapping; and of a prodigious ſtrong man, that was going to ſhove down the cupola of St. Paul's; of three millions of five pound pieces, that eſquire South had found under an old wall; of blazing ſtars, flying dragons, and abundance of ſuch ſtuff. All the ſervants in the family made high court to her, for ſhe domineered there, and turned out and in whom ſhe pleaſed; only there was an old grudge between her and Sir Roger, whom ſhe mortally hated, and uſed to hire fellows to ſquirt kennel water upon him, as he paſſed along the ſtreets; ſo that he was forced conſtantly to wear a ſurtout of oiled cloth, by which means he came home pretty clean, except where the ſurtout was a little ſcanty.

As for the third *, ſhe was a thief, and a common mercenary proſtitute, and that without any

* *Uſuria*, Uſury.

ſolicitation

ſolicitation from nature, for ſhe owned ſhe had no enjoyment. She had no reſpect of perſons; a prince or a porter was all one, according as they paid; yea, ſhe would leave the fineſt gentleman in the world, to go to an ugly pocky fellow, for ſixpence more. In the practice of her profeſſion ſhe had amaſſed vaſt magazines of all ſorts of things; ſhe had above five hundred ſuits of fine clothes, and yet went abroad like a cynder-wench: ſhe robbed and ſtarved all the ſervants, ſo that nobody could live near her.

So much for John's three daughters, which you will ſay were rarities to be fond of: yet nature will ſhew itſelf; nobody could blame their relations for taking care of them: and therefore it was that Hocus, with two other of the guardians, thought it their duty to take care of the intereſt of the three girls, and give John their beſt advice before he compounded the law-ſuit.

Hocus. What makes you ſo ſhy of late, my good friend? There's nobody loves you better than I, nor has taken more pains in your affairs: as I hope to be ſaved, I would do any thing to ſerve you; I would crawl upon all four to ſerve you; I have ſpent my health and paternal eſtate in your ſervice. I have, indeed, a ſmall pittance left, with which I might retire, and with as good a conſcience as any man; but the thoughts of this diſgraceful compoſition ſo touches me to the quick, that I cannot ſleep: after I had brought the cauſe to the laſt ſtroke, that one verdict more had quite ruined old Lewis and lord Strutt, and put you in the

the quiet poſſeſſion of every thing; then to compound! I cannot bear it. This cauſe was my favourite, I had ſet my heart upon it; it is like an only child; I cannot endure it ſhould miſcarry; for God's ſake conſider only to what a diſmal condition old Lewis is brought. He is at an end of all his caſh; his attorneys have hardly one trick left; they are at an end of all their chicane; beſides, he has both his law and his daily bread now upon truſt. Hold out only one term longer, and I'll warrant you, before the next, we ſhall have him in the Fleet. I'll bring him to the pillory; his ears ſhall pay for his perjuries. For the love of God, don't compound: let me be damned if you have a friend in the world, that loves you better than I: there is nobody can ſay I am covetous, or that I have any intereſt to purſue, but yours.

2d GUARDIAN. There is nothing ſo plain, as that this Lewis has a deſign to ruin all his neighbouring tradeſmen; and at this time he has ſuch a prodigious income, by his trade of all kinds, that if there is not ſome ſtop put to his exorbitant riches, he will monopolize every thing: nobody will be able to ſell a yard of drapery or mercery ware but himſelf. I then hold it adviſeable, that you continue the law-ſuit, and burſt him at once. My concern for the three poor motherleſs children, obliges me to give you this advice; for their eſtates, poor girls! depend upon the ſucceſs of this cauſe.

3d GUARDIAN. I own this writ of ejectment has coſt dear; but then conſider it is a jewel well worth

worth the purchaſing at the price of all you have. None but Mr. Bull's declared enemies can ſay, he has any other ſecurity for his clothing trade, but the ejectment of lord Strutt. The only queſtion then that remains to be decided, is, who ſhall ſtand the expences of the ſuit? To which the anſwer is as plain; who but he, that is to have the advantage of the ſentence? When eſquire South has got poſſeſſion of his title and honour, is not John Bull to be his clothier? Who, then, but John, ought to put him in poſſeſſion? Aſk but any indifferent gentleman, who ought to bear his charges at law? and he will readily anſwer, his tradeſmen. I do therefore affirm, and I will go to death with it, that, being his clothier, you ought to put him in quiet poſſeſſion of his eſtate, and, with the ſame generous ſpirit you have begun it, complete the good work. If you perſiſt in the bad meaſures you are now in, what muſt become of the three poor orphans? My heart bleeds for the poor girls.

JOHN BULL. You are all very eloquent perſons; but give me leave to tell you, you expreſs a great deal more concern for the three girls than for me; I think my intereſt ought to be conſidered in the firſt place. As for you, Hocus, I can't but ſay you have managed my law-ſuit with great addreſs, and much to my honour; and, though I ſay it, you have been well paid for it. Why muſt the burden be taken off Frog's back, and laid upon my ſhoulders? He can drive about his own parks and fields in his gilt chariot, when I have been

forced

forced to mortgage my eſtate: his note will go farther than my bond. Is it not matter of fact, that, from the richeſt tradeſman in all the country, I am reduced to beg and borrow from ſcriveners and uſurers, that ſuck the heart, blood, and guts out of me? and what is all this for? Did you like Frog's countenance better than mine? Was not I your old friend and relation? Have I not preſented you nobly? Have I not clad your whole family? Have you not had a hundred yards at a time of the fineſt cloth in my ſhop? Why muſt the reſt of the tradeſmen be not only indemnified from charges, but forbid to go on with their own buſineſs, and what is more their concern than mine? As to holding out this term, I appeal to your own conſcience, has not that been your conſtant diſcourſe theſe ſix years, "one term more, "and old Lewis goes to pot." If thou art ſo fond of my cauſe, be generous for once, and lend me a brace of thouſands. Ah Hocus! Hocus! I know thee; not a ſous to ſave me from gaol, I trow. Look ye, gentlemen, I have lived with credit in the world, and it grieves my heart, never to ſtir out of my doors, but to be pulled by the ſleeve by ſome raſcally dun or other: "Sir, remember my "bill: there's a ſmall concern of a thouſand "pounds, I hope you think on't, Sir." And to have theſe uſurers tranſact my debts at coffee-houſes, and ale-houſes, as if I were going to break up ſhop. Lord! that ever the rich, the generous John Bull, clothier, the envy of all his neighbours, ſhould be brought to compound his debts for five

ſhillings

ſhillings in the pound; and to have his name in an advertiſement for a ſtatute of bankrupt. The thought of it makes me mad. I have read ſomewhere in the Apocrypha, that one ſhould not "conſult with a woman, touching her of whom "ſhe is jealous; nor with a merchant, concerning "exchange; nor with a buyer, of ſelling; nor "with an unmerciful man, of kindneſs, &c." I could have added one thing more, "nor with an "attorney, about compounding a law-ſuit." The ejectment of lord Strutt will never do. The evidence is crimp; the witneſſes ſwear backwards and forwards, and contradict themſelves; and his tenants ſtick by him. One tells me, that I muſt carry on my ſuit, becauſe Lewis is poor; another, becauſe he is ſtill too rich: whom ſhall I believe? I am ſure of one thing, that a penny in the purſe is the beſt friend John can have at laſt; and who can ſay that this will be the laſt ſuit I ſhall be engaged in? Beſides, if this ejectment were practicable, is it reaſonable, that when eſquire South is loſing his money to ſharpers and pickpockets, going about the country with fiddlers and buffoons, and ſquandering his income with hawks and dogs, I ſhould lay out the fruits of my honeſt induſtry in a law-ſuit for him, only upon the hopes of being his clothier? And when the cauſe is over, I ſhall not have the benefit of my project for want of money to go to market. Look ye, gentlemen, John Bull is but a plain man; but John Bull knows when he is ill-uſed. I know the infirmity of our family; we are apt to play the boon companion, and throw

away

away our money in our cups: but it was an unfair thing in you, gentlemen, to take advantage of my weakneſs, to keep a parcel of roaring bullies about me day and night, with huzzas and hunting-horns, and ringing the changes on butchers cleavers, never let me cool, and make me ſet my hand to papers, when I could hardly hold my pen. There will come a day of reckoning for all that proceeding. In the mean time, gentlemen, I beg you will let me into my affairs a little, and that you would not grudge me the ſmall remainder of a very great eſtate.

CHAP. XVII.

Eſquire South's *meſſage and letter to Mrs.* Bull.

THE arguments uſed by Hocus and the reſt of the guardians had hitherto proved inſufficient*: John and his wife could not be perſuaded to bear the expence of eſquire South's law-ſuit. They thought it reaſonable, that ſince he was to have the honour and advantage, he ſhould bear the greateſt ſhare of the charges; and retrench what he loſt to ſharpers, and ſpent upon country-dances and puppet-plays, to apply it to that uſe. This was not very grateful to the eſquire; therefore, as the laſt experiment, he reſolved to ſend ſignior Benenato †, maſter of his fox-hounds, to

* But as all attempts of the party to preclude the treaty were ineffectual, and complaints were made of the deficiencies of the houſe of Auſtria, the Archduke ſent a meſſage and letter

† by Prince Eugene, urging the continuance of the war, and offering to bear a proportion of the expence.

Mrs.

Mrs. Bull, to try what good he could do with her. This ſignior Benenato had all the qualities of a fine gentleman, that were fit to charm a lady's heart; and if any perſon in the world could have perſuaded her, it was he. But ſuch was her unſhaken fidelity to her huſband, and the conſtant purpoſe of her mind to purſue his intereſt, that the moſt refined arts of gallantry that were practiſed, could not ſeduce her heart. The necklaces, diamond croſſes, and rich bracelets that were offered, ſhe rejected with the utmoſt ſcorn and diſdain. The muſic and ſerenades that were given her, ſounded more ungratefully in her ears than the noiſe of a ſcreech-owl; however, ſhe received eſquire South's letter by the hands of ſignior Benenato with that reſpect, which became his quality. The copy of the letter is as follows, in which you will obſerve he changes a little his uſual ſtyle.

MADAM,

THE writ of ejectment againſt Philip Baboon, (pretended lord Strutt) is juſt ready to paſs: there want but a few neceſſary forms, and a verdict or two more, to put me in quiet poſſeſſion of my honour and eſtate: I queſtion not, but that, according to your wonted generoſity and goodneſs, you will give it the finiſhing ſtroke; an honour that I would grudge any body but yourſelf. In order to eaſe you of ſome part of the charges, I promiſe to furniſh pen, ink, and paper, provided you pay for the ſtamps. Beſides, I have ordered my ſtewards to pay, out of the readieſt and beſt of

my rents, five pounds ten ſhillings a year, till my ſuit is finiſhed. I wiſh you health and happineſs being, with due reſpect,

Madam,

Your aſſured friend,

SOUTH.

What anſwer Mrs. Bull returned to this letter you ſhall know in my Second Part, only they were at a pretty good diſtance in their propoſals; for as eſquire South only offered to be at the charges of pen, ink, and paper, Mrs. Bull refuſed any more than to lend her barge *, to carry his counſel to Weſtminſter-hall.

* This proportion was however thought to be ſo inconſiderable, that the letter produced no other effect, than the convoy of the forces by the Engliſh fleet to Barcelona.

Law is a Bottomleſs Pit:

OR, THE

HISTORY

OF

JOHN BULL.

THE SECOND PART.

M.DCC.XIII.

THE

HISTORY

OF

JOHN BULL.

PART II.

THE PUBLISHER'S PREFACE.

THE world is much indebted to the famous ſir Humphry Poleſworth for his ingenious and impartial account of John Bull's law-ſuit; yet there is juſt cauſe of complaint againſt him, in that he relates it only by parcels, and won't give us the whole work: This forces me, who am only the publiſher, to beſpeak the aſſiſtance of his friends and acquaintance, to engage him to lay aſide that ſtingy humour, and gratify the curioſity of the public at once. He pleads in excuſe, that they are only private memoirs, written for his own uſe, in a looſe ſtyle, to ſerve as a help to his ordinary converſation *. I repreſented to him the good reception the Firſt Part had met with; that though cal-

* This excuſe of ſir Humphry can only relate to the Second Part, or ſequel of the hiſtory. See the rPeface to the Firſt Part.

culated only for the meridian of Grub-ſtreet, it was yet taken notice of by the better ſort; that the world was now ſufficiently acquainted with John Bull, and intereſted itſelf in his concerns. He anſwered, with a ſmile, that he had indeed ſome trifling things to impart, that concerned John Bull's relations and domeſtic affairs; if theſe would ſatisfy me, he gave me free leave to make uſe of them, becauſe they would ſerve to make the hiſtory of the law-ſuit more intelligible. When I had looked over the manuſcript, I found likewiſe ſome farther account of the compoſition, which perhaps may not be unacceptable to ſuch as have read the former part.

CHAP. I.

The character of * John Bull's *mother.*

JOHN had a mother, whom he loved and honoured extremely, a diſcreet, grave, ſober, good conditioned, cleanly old gentlewoman as ever lived; ſhe was none of your croſs grained, termagant, ſcolding jades, that one had as good be hanged as live in the houſe with, ſuch as are always cenſuring the conduct, and telling ſcandalous ſtories of their neighbours, extolling their own good qualities, and undervaluing thoſe of others. On the contrary, ſhe was of a meek ſpirit, and as ſhe was ſtrictly virtuous herſelf, ſo ſhe always put the beſt conſtruction upon the words and actions of her neigh-

* The church of England.

bours, except where they were irreconcileable to the rules of honeſty and decency. She was neither one of your preciſe prudes, nor one of your fantaſtical old belles, that dreſs themſelves like girls of fifteen: as ſhe neither wore a ruff, forehead cloth, nor high crowned hat, ſo ſhe had laid aſide feathers, flowers, and crimpt ribbons, in her head-dreſs, furbelo-ſcarfs, and hooped-petticoats. She ſcorned to patch and paint, yet ſhe loved to keep her hands and her face clean. Though ſhe wore no flaunting laced ruffles, ſhe would not keep herſelf in a conſtant ſweat with greaſy flannel: though her hair was not ſtuck with jewels, ſhe was not aſhamed of a diamond croſs; ſhe was not like ſome ladies, hung about with toys and trinkets, tweezer-caſes, pocket glaſſes, and eſſence bottles; ſhe uſed only a gold watch and an almanack, to mark the hours and the holy-days.

Her furniture was neat and genteel, well fancied with a *bon gouſt*. As ſhe affected not the grandeur of a ſtate with a canopy, ſhe thought there was no offence in an elbow-chair; ſhe had laid aſide your carving, gilding, and japan-work, as being too apt to gather dirt; but ſhe never could be prevailed upon to part with plain wainſcot and clean hangings. There are ſome ladies, that affect to ſmell a ſtink in every thing; they are always highly perfumed, and continually burning frankincenſe in their rooms; ſhe was above ſuch affectation, yet ſhe never would lay aſide the uſe of brooms and ſcrubbing-bruſhes, and ſcrupled not to lay her linen in freſh lavender.

She was no leſs genteel in her behaviour, well-bred, without affectation, in the due mean between one of your affected curt'ſying pieces of formality, and your romps that have no regard to the common rules of civility. There are ſome ladies, that affect a mighty regard for their relations; We muſt not eat to-day, for my uncle Tom, or my couſin Betty, died this time ten years: Let's have a ball to-night, it is my neighbour ſuch-a-one's birth-day; She looked upon all this as grimace; yet ſhe conſtantly obſerved her huſband's birth-day, her wedding-day, and ſome few more.

Though ſhe was a truly good woman, and had a ſincere motherly love for her ſon John, yet there wanted not thoſe who endeavoured to create a miſunderſtanding between them, and they had ſo far prevailed with him once, that he turned her out of doors *, to his great ſorrow, as he found afterwards, for his affairs went on at ſixes and ſevens.

She was no leſs judicious in the turn of her converſation and choice of her ſtudies, in which ſhe far exceeded all her ſex: your rakes that hate the company of all ſober, grave gentlewomen, would bear hers; and ſhe would, by her handſome manner of proceeding, ſooner reclaim them than ſome that were more ſour and reſerved: ſhe was a zealous preacher up of chaſtity, and conjugal fidelity in wives, and by no means a friend to the new-fangled doctrine of the indiſpenſible duty of cuckoldom: though ſhe advanced her opinions with a becoming aſſurance, yet ſhe never uſhered them in,

* In the Rebellion of 1641.

as

as ſome poſitive creatures will do, with dogmatical aſſertions, This is infallible; I cannot be miſtaken; none but a rogue can deny it. It has been obſerved that ſuch people are oftner in the wrong than any body.

Though ſhe had a thouſand good qualities, ſhe was not without her faults; among which, one might perhaps reckon too great lenity to her ſervants, to whom ſhe always gave good counſel, but often too gentle correction. I thought I could not ſay leſs of John Bull's mother, becauſe ſhe bears a part in the following tranſactions.

CHAP. II.

The character of John Bull's **ſiſter* Peg, *with the quarrels that happened between maſter and miſs in their childhood.*

JOHN had a ſiſter, a poor girl that had been ſtarved at nurſe; any body would have gueſſed miſs to have been bred up under the influence of a cruel ſtep-dame, and John to be the fondling of a tender mother. John looked ruddy and plump, with a pair of cheeks like a trumpeter; miſs looked pale and wan, as if ſhe had the green-ſickneſs; and no wonder, for John was the darling, he had all the good bits, was crammed with good pullet, chicken, pig, gooſe, and capon, while miſs had only a little oatmeal and water, or a dry cruſt without butter. John had his golden pippins, peaches,

* The nation and church of Scotland.

and nectarines; poor miſs a crab-apple, ſloe, or a blackberry. Maſter lay in the beſt apartment, with his bed-chamber towards the ſouth ſun. Miſs lodged in a garret, expoſed to the north wind, which ſhrivelled her countenance; however, this uſage, though it ſtunted the girl in her growth, gave her a hardy conſtitution; ſhe had life and ſpirit in abundance, and knew when ſhe was ill uſed: now and then ſhe would ſeize upon John's commons, ſnatch a leg of a pullet, or a bit of good beef, for which they were ſure to go to fiſty-cuffs. Maſter was indeed too ſtrong for her; but miſs would not yield in the leaſt point, but even when maſter had got her down, ſhe would ſcratch and bite like a tyger; when he gave her a cuff on the ear, ſhe would prick him with her knitting-needle. John brought a great chain one day to tie her to the bed-poſt, for which affront miſs aimed a pen-knife at his heart *. In ſhort, theſe quarrels grew up to rooted averſions; they gave one another nick-names: ſhe called him Gundy-guts, and he called her Louſy Peg; though the girl was a tight clever wench as any was, and through her pale looks you might diſcern ſpirit and vivacity, which made her not, indeed, a perfect beauty, but ſomething that was agreeable. It was barbarous in parents not to take notice of theſe early quarrels, and make them live better together, ſuch domeſtic feuds proving afterwards the occaſion of misfortunes

* Henry VIII. to unite the two kingdoms under one ſovereign offered his daughter Mary to James V. of Scotland; this offer was rejected, and followed by a war: to this event probably the author alludes.

to them both. Peg had, indeed, ſome odd humours, and comical antipathy, for which John would jeer her. "What think you of my ſiſter "Peg (ſays he) that faints at the ſound of an or-"gan, and yet will dance and friſk at the noiſe of "a bag-pipe?" "What's that to you, Gundy-"guts, (quoth Peg) every body's to chooſe their "own muſick." Then Peg had taken a fancy not to ſay her *Pater-noſter*, which made people imagine ſtrange things of her. Of the three brothers, that have made ſuch a clutter in the world, lord Peter, Martin, and Jack, Jack * had of late been her inclinations: lord Peter ſhe deteſted: nor did Martin ſtand much better in her good graces, but Jack had found the way to her heart. I have often admired, what charms ſhe diſcovered in that awkward booby, till I talked with a perſon that was acquainted with the intrigue, who gave me the following account of it.

CHAP. III.

Jack's † *charms, or the method by which he gained* Peg's *heart.*

IN the firſt place, Jack was a very young fellow, by much the youngeſt of the three brothers, and people, indeed, wondered how ſuch a young upſtart jackanapes ſhould grow ſo pert and ſaucy, and take ſo much upon him.

* Love of Preſbytery. † Character of the Preſbyterians.

Jack

Jack bragged of greater abilities than other men; he was well-gifted, as he pretended; I need not tell you what ſecret influence that has upon the ladies.

Jack had a moſt ſcandalous tongue, and perſuaded Peg that all mankind, beſide himſelf, were poxed by that ſcarlet-faced whore * Signiora Bugonia. "As for his brother, lord Peter, the to-"kens were evident on him, blotches, ſcabs, and "the corona: his brother Martin, though he was "not quite ſo bad, had ſome nocturnal pains, "which his friends pretended were only ſcorbuti-"cal; but he was ſure it proceeded from a worſe "cauſe." By ſuch malicious inſinuations, he had poſſeſſed the lady, that he was the only man in the world of a ſound, pure, and untainted conſtitution; though there were ſome that ſtuck not to ſay, that Signiora Bubonia and Jack railed at one another, only the better to hide an intrigue; and that Jack had been found with Signiora under his cloak, carrying her home in a dark ſtormy night.

Jack was a prodigious ogler; he would ogle you the outſide of his eye inward, and the white upward.

Jack gave himſelf out for a man of a great eſtate in the fortunate iſlands; of which the ſole property was veſted in his perſon: by this trick he cheated abundance of poor people of ſmall ſums, pretending to make over plantations in the ſaid iſlands; but when the poor wretches came there with Jack's

* The whore of Babylon, or the Pope.

grant,

grant, they were beat, mocked, and turned out of doors.

I told you that Peg was whimſical, and loved any thing that was particular: in that way, Jack was her man, for he neither thought, ſpoke, dreſſed, nor acted like other mortals: he was for your bold ſtrokes, he railed at fops, though he was himſelf the moſt affected in the world; inſtead of the common faſhion, he would viſit his miſtreſs in a mourning cloak, band, ſhort cuffs, and a peaked beard. He invented a way of coming into a room backwards, which, he ſaid, ſhewed more humility, and leſs affectation: where other people ſtood, he ſat; where they ſat, he ſtood; when he went to court, he uſed to kick away the ſtate, and ſit down by his prince cheek by jole: Confound theſe ſtates, ſays he, they are a modern invention: when he ſpoke to his prince, he always turned his br—ch upon him: if he was adviſed to faſt for his health, he would eat roaſt-beef; if he was allowed a more plentiful diet, then he would be ſure that day to live upon water-gruel; he would cry at a wedding, laugh and make jeſts at a funeral.

He was no leſs ſingular in his opinions; you would have burſt your ſides to hear him talk of politics *: "All government, ſays he, is founded "upon the right diſtribution of puniſhments; de- "cent executions keep the world in awe; for that "reaſon the majority of mankind ought to be "hanged every year. For example, I ſuppoſe,

* Abſolute predeſtination.

"the

" the magiſtrate ought to paſs an irreverſible ſen-
" tence upon all blue-eyed children from the
" cradle *; but that there may be ſome ſhew of
" juſtice in this proceeding, theſe children ought
" to be trained up by maſters, appointed for that
" purpoſe, to all ſorts of villany; that they may
" deſerve their fate, and the execution of them
" may ſerve as an object of terror to the reſt of
" mankind." As to the giving of pardons, he had this ſingular method †, That when theſe wretches had the rope about their necks, it ſhould be enquired, who believed they ſhould be hanged, and who not? The firſt were to be pardoned, the laſt hanged out-right. Such as were once pardoned, were never to be hanged afterwards for any crime whatſoever ‡. He had ſuch ſkill in phyſiognomy, that he would pronounce peremptorily upon a man's face, That fellow, ſays he, do what he will, can't avoid hanging; he has a hanging look. By the ſame art he would prognoſticate a principality to a ſcoundrel.

He was no leſs particular in the choice of his ſtudies; they were generally bent towards exploded chimeras, § the *perpetuum mobile*, the circular ſhot, philoſopher's ſtone, ſilent gun-powder, making chains for fleas, nets for flies, and inſtruments to unravel cobwebs, and ſplit hairs.

* Reprobation.
† Saving faith; a belief that one ſhall certainly be ſaved.
‡ Election.
§ The learning of the Preſbyterians.

Thus,

Thus, I think, I have given a diſtinct account of the methods he practiſed upon Peg. Her brother would now and then aſk her, "What a devil "do'ſt thou ſee in that pragmatical coxcomb to "make thee ſo in love with him? he is a fit match "for a taylor or a ſhoemaker's daughter, but not "for you, that are a gentlewoman." "Fancy is "free, quoth Peg: I'll take my own way, do you "take yours. I do not care for your flaunting "beaus, that gang with their breaſts open, and "their ſarks over their waiſtcoats; that accoſt me "with ſet ſpeeches out of Sidney's Arcadia, or the "Academy of Compliments. Jack is a ſober, "grave, young man; though he has none of your "ſtudied harangues, his meaning is ſincere: he "has a great regard to his father's will; and he "that ſhews himſelf a good ſon, will make a good "huſband; beſides, I know he has the original "deed of conveyance to the fortunate iſlands; the "others are counterfeits." There is nothing ſo obſtinate as a young lady in her amours; the more you croſs her, the worſe ſhe is.

CHAP. IV.

How the relations reconciled John *and his ſiſter* Peg, *and what return* Peg *made to* John's *meſſage* *.

JOHN BULL, otherwiſe a good-natured man, was very hard-hearted to his ſiſter Peg, chiefly from an averſion he had conceived in his infancy.

* The treaty of Union between England and Scotland.

While

While he flouriſhed, kept a warm houſe, and drove a plentiful trade, poor Peg was forced to go hawking and peddling about the ſtreets, ſelling knives, ſciſſars, and ſhoe-buckles; now and then carried a baſket of fiſh to the market; ſewed, ſpun, and knit for a livelihood, till her fingers-ends were ſore, and when ſhe could not get bread for her family, ſhe was forced to hire them out at journey work to her neighbours. Yet in theſe her poor circumſtances ſhe ſtill preſerved the air and mien of a gentlewoman, a certain decent pride, that extorted reſpect from the haughtieſt of her neighbours; when ſhe came into any full aſſembly, ſhe would not yield the *pas* to the beſt of them. If one aſked her, are not you related to John Bull? "Yes, ſays ſhe, "he has the honour to be my brother." So Peg's affairs went, till all the relations cried out ſhame upon John for his barbarous uſage of his own fleſh and blood; that it was an eaſy matter for him to put her in a creditable way of living, not only without hurt, but with advantage to himſelf, being ſhe was an induſtrious perſon, and might be ſerviceable to him in his way of buſineſs. "Hang "her, jade, quoth John; I can't endure her, as "long as ſhe keeps that raſcal Jack's company." They told him, the way to reclaim her was to take her into his houſe; that by converſation the childiſh humours of their younger days might be worn out. Theſe arguments were enforced by a certain incident. It happened that John was at that time about making his * will and entailing his eſtate, the

* The ſucceſſion to the crown having been ſettled by act of parliament in England, upon the houſe of Hanover, and no ſuch act having

very ſame in which Nic. Frog is named executor. Now his ſiſter Peg's name being in the entail, he could not make a thorough ſettlement without her conſent. There was, indeed, a malicious ſtory went about, as if John's laſt wife had fallen in love with Jack as he was † eating cuſtard on horſeback; that ſhe perſuaded John to take his ſiſter into the houſe, the better to drive on the intrigue with Jack, concluding he would follow his miſtreſs Peg. All I can infer from this ſtory, is, that when one has got a bad character in the world, people will report and believe any thing of one, true or falſe. But to return to my ſtory; when Peg received John's meſſage, ſhe huffed and ſtormed like the devil ‡: "My brother John, quoth ſhe, is grown "wonderous kind-hearted all of a ſudden, but I "meikle doubt, whether it be not mair for their "own conveniency than for my good; he draws "up his writs and his deeds, forſooth, and I muſt "ſet my hand to them, unſight, unſeen. I like "the young man he has ſettled upon well enough, "but I think I ought to have a valuable conſide-"ration for my conſent. He wants my poor little "farm, becauſe it makes a nook in his park-wall: "ye may e'en tell him, he has mair than he makes "good uſe of; he gangs up and down drinking,

having paſſed in Scotland, then a ſeparate kingdom, it was thought, a proper time to complete the union which had been often attempted, and which was recommended to the Scots by king William III.

† A Preſbyterian lord mayor of London.

‡ The Scots expreſſed their fears for the preſbyterian government, and of being burdened with the Engliſh national debts.

" roaring, and quarrelling, through all the country " markets, making fooliſh bargains in his cups, " which he repents when he is ſober; like a thrift- " leſs wretch, ſpending the goods and gear that his " fore-fathers won with the ſweat of their brows; " light come, light go, he cares not a farthing. " But why ſhould I ſtand ſurety for his contracts; " the little I have is free, and I can call it my awn; " hame's hame, let it be never ſo hamely. I ken " him well enough, he could never abide me, and " when he has his ends, he'll e'en uſe me as he did " before. I am ſure I ſhall be treated like a poor " drudge: I ſhall be ſet to tend the bairns, dearn " the hoſe, and mend the linen. Then there's no " living with that old carline his mother; ſhe rails " at Jack, and Jack's an honeſter man than any " of her kin: I ſhall be plagued with her ſpells and " her *Pater-noſters*, and ſilly old-world ceremonies; " I mun never pare my nails on a friday, nór be- " gin a journey on childermas-day; and I mun " ſtand becking and binging, as I gang out and " into the hall. Tell him he may e'en gang his " get; I'll have nothing to do with him; I'll ſtay, " like the poor country mouſe, in my awn habi- " tation." So Peg talked; but for all that, by the interpoſition of good friends, and by many a bonny thing that was ſent, and many more that were promiſed Peg, the matter was concluded, and Peg taken into the houſe upon certain articles: one of which was, that ſhe might have the freedom of Jack's converſation *, and might take him for bet-

* The act of toleration.

ter

ter and for worſe, if ſhe pleaſed; provided always, he did not come into the houſe at unſeaſonable hours, and diſturb the reſt of the old woman, John's mother.

CHAP. V.

Of ſome quarrels, that happened after Peg *was taken into the family* †.

IT is an old obſervation, that the quarrels of relations are harder to reconcile than any other; injuries from friends fret and gall more, and the memory of them is not ſo eaſily obliterated. This is cunningly repreſented by one of your old ſages, called Æſop, in the ſtory of the bird, that was grieved extremely at being wounded with an arrow feathered with his own wing; as alſo of the oak, that let many a heavy groan, when he was cleft with a a wedge of his own timber.

There was no man in the world leſs ſubject to rancour than John Bull, conſidering how often his good-nature had been abuſed; yet I don't know how, but he was too apt to hearken to tattling people, that carried tales between him and his ſiſter Peg, on purpoſe to ſow jealouſies, and ſet them together by the ears. They ſay that there were ſome hardſhips put upon Peg, which had been

† Quarrels about ſome of the articles of Union, particularly the Peerage.

better let alone; but it was the buſineſs of good people to reſtrain the injuries on one ſide, and moderate the reſentments on the other; a good friend acts both parts; the one without the other will not do.

The purchaſe money of Peg's farm was ill paid*; then Peg loved a little good liquor, and the ſervants ſhut up the wine-cellar; but for that Peg found a trick, for ſhe made a falſe key †. Peg's ſervants complained, that they were debarred from all manner of buſineſs, and never ſuffered to touch the leaſt thing within the houſe ‡; if they offered to come into the warehouſe, then ſtraight went the yard ſlap over their noddle; if they ventured into the counting-room, a fellow would throw an ink-bottle at their head; if they came into the beſt apartment, to ſet any thing there in order, they were ſaluted with a broom; if they meddled with any thing in the kitchen, it was odds but the cook laid them over the pate with a ladle; one that would have got into the ſtables, was met by two raſcals, who fell to work with him with a bruſh and a curry-comb; ſome climbing up into the coach-box, were told, that one of their companions had been there before that could not

* By the xvth article of the treaty of Union, it was agreed that Scotland ſhould have an equivalent for ſeveral cuſtoms and exciſes to which ſhe would become liable, and this equivalent was not paid.

† Run wine.

‡ By the teſt act, diſſenters are excluded from places and employments.

drive;

drive; then ſlap went the long whip about their ears.

On the other hand it was complained, that Peg's ſervants were always aſking for drink-money*; that they had more than their ſhare of the Chriſtmas-box: to ſay the truth, Peg's lads buſtled pretty hard for that; for when they were endeavouring to lock it up, they got in their great fiſts, and pulled out handfuls of half-crowns, ſhillings, and ſix-pences. Others in the ſcramble picked up guineas and broad-pieces. But there happened a worſe thing than all this; it was complained that Peg's ſervants had great ſtomachs, and brought ſo many of their friends and acquaintance to the table, that John's family was like to be eat out of houſe and home. Inſtead of regulating this matter as it ought to be, Peg's young men were thruſt away from the table; then there was the devil and all to do; ſpoons, plates and diſhes flew abut the room like mad; and Sir Roger, who was now *major domo*, had enough to do to quiet them. Peg ſaid, this was contrary to agreement, whereby ſhe was in all things to be treated like a child of the family; then ſhe called upon thoſe, that had made her ſuch fair promiſes, and undertook for her brother John's good behaviour; but, alas! to her coſt ſhe found, that they were the firſt and readieſt to do her the injury. John at laſt agreed to this regulation; that Peg's footmen might ſit with his book-keeper, journeymen, and apprentices; and Peg's better

* Endeavoured to get their ſhare of places.

ſort of ſervants might ſit with his footmen, if they pleaſed *.

Then they began to order plumb-porridge and minced-pies for Peg's dinner: Peg told them ſhe had an averſion to that ſort of food; that upon forcing down a meſs of it ſome years ago †, it threw her into a fit, till ſhe brought it up again. Some alleged it was nothing but humour, that the ſame meſs ſhould be ſerved up again for ſupper, and breakfaſt next morning; others would have made uſe of a horn; but the wiſer ſort bid let her alone, and ſhe might take to it of her own accord.

CHAP. VI.

The converſation between John Bull *and his wife.*

Mrs. BULL. THOUGH our affairs, honey, are in a bad condition, I have a better opinion of them, ſince you ſeemed to be convinced of the ill courſe you have been in, and are reſolved to ſubmit to proper remedies. But when I conſider your immenſe debts, your fooliſh bargains, and the general diſorder of your buſineſs, I have a curioſity to know what fate or chance has brought you into this condition.

J. BULL. I wiſh you would talk of ſome other ſubject; the thoughts of it make me mad; our family muſt have their run.

* Articles of Union, whereby they could make a Scots commoner, but not a lord, a peer.

† Introducing epiſcopacy into Scotland, by Charles I.

Mrs.

Mrs. BULL. But ſuch a ſtrange thing as this never happened to any of your family before: they have had law-ſuits, but though they ſpent the income, they never mortgaged the ſtock. Sure you muſt have ſome of the Norman or the Norfolk blood in you. Prithee give me ſome account of theſe matters.

J. BULL. Who could help it? There lives not ſuch a fellow by bread as that old Lewis Baboon: he is the moſt cheating contentious rogue upon the face of the earth. You muſt know, one day, as Nic. Frog and I were over a bottle, making up an old quarrel, the old fellow would needs have us drink a bottle of his Champagne, and ſo one after another, till my friend Nic. and I, not being uſed to ſuch heady ſtuff, got bloody drunk. Lewis all the while, either by the ſtrength of his brain, or ſlinching his glaſs, kept himſelf ſober as a judge. "My worthy friends, quoth Lewis, henceforth "let us live neighbourly; I am as peaceable and "quiet as a lamb, of my own temper, but it has "been my misfortune to live among quarrelſome "neighbours. There is but one thing can make "us fall out, and that is the inheritance of lord "Strutt's eſtate; I am content, for peace ſake, to "wave my right, and ſubmit to any expedient to "prevent a law-ſuit; I think an equal diviſion "will be the faireſt way*." "Well moved, old "Lewis," quoth Frog; and I hope my friend "John here will not be refractory." At the ſame

* A treaty for preſerving the balance of power in Europe by a partition of the Spaniſh dominions.

time he clapped me on the back, and ſlabbered me all over from cheek to cheek, with his great tongue. "Do as you pleaſe, gentlemen," quoth I, "'tis all one to John Bull." We agreed to part that night, and next morning to meet at the corner of lord Strutt's park-wall with our ſurveying inſtruments, which accordingly we did. Old Lewis carried a chain and a ſemicircle; Nic. paper, rulers, and a lead pencil; and I followed at ſome diſtance with a long pole. We began firſt with ſurveying the meadow grounds; afterwards we meaſured the corn fields, cloſe by cloſe; then we proceeded to the wood lands, the copper and tin mines †. All this while Nic. laid down every thing exactly upon paper, calculated the acres and roods to a great nicety. When we had finiſhed the land, we were going to break into the houſe and gardens to take an inventory of his plate, pictures, and other furniture.

Mrs. BULL. What ſaid lord Strutt to all this?

J. BULL. As we had almoſt finiſhed our concern, we were accoſted by ſome of lord Strutt's ſervants: "Heyday! What's here? What a de-"vil's the meaning of all theſe trangrams and "gimcracks, gentlemen? What in the name of "wonder are you going about, jumping over my "maſter's hedges, and running your lines croſs "his grounds? If you are at any field paſtime, "you might have aſked leave; my maſter is a "civil, well-bred perſon as any is."

Mrs. BULL. What could you anſwer to this?

† The Weſt-Indies.

J. BULL.

J. BULL. Why truly my neighbour Frog and I were ſtill hot-headed; we told him his maſter was an old doating puppy, that minded nothing of his own buſineſs; that we were ſurveying his eſtate, and ſettling it for him, ſince he would not do it himſelf. Upon this there happened a quarrel, but we, being ſtronger than they, ſent them away with a flea in their ear. They went home and told their maſter*: "My lord," ſaid they, "there are three odd ſort of fellows going about "your grounds, with the ſtrangeſt machines that "ever we beheld in our life: I ſuppoſe they are "going to rob your orchard, fell your trees, or "drive away your cattle: they told us ſtrange "things of ſettling your eſtate: one is a luſty old "fellow, in a black wig, with a black beard, "without teeth: there's another thick ſquat fel-"low, in trunk-hoſe: the third is a little, long-"noſed, thin man (I was then lean, being juſt "come out of a fit of ſickneſs). I ſuppoſe it is fit "to ſend after them, leſt they carry ſomething "away."

Mrs. BULL. I fancy this put the old fellow in a rare tweague.

J. BULL. Weak as he was, he called for his long toledo, ſwore and bounced about the room, "'Sdeath! what am I come to, to be affronted ſo "by my tradeſmen? I know the raſcals: my "barber, clothier, and linen-draper diſpoſe of my "eſtate! bring hither my blunderbuſs. I'll war-

* This partition of the king of Spain's dominions was made without his conſent, or even his knowledge.

rant

" rant ye, you ſhall ſee day-light through them.
" Scoundrels! dogs! the ſcum of the earth!
" Frog, that was my father's kitchen-boy! he
" pretend to meddle with my eſtate! with my
" will! Ah poor Strutt! what art thou come to
" at laſt? Thou haſt lived too long in the world,
" to ſee thy age and infirmity ſo deſpiſed: how
" will the ghoſts of my noble anceſtors receive
" theſe tidings? They cannot, they muſt not
" ſleep quietly in their graves." In ſhort, the old gentleman was carried off in a fainting fit; and, after bleeding in both arms, hardly recovered.

Mrs. BULL. Really this was a very extraordinary way of proceeding: I long to hear the reſt of it.

J. BULL. After we had come back to the tavern, and taken t'other bottle of Champagne, we quarrelled a little about the diviſion of the eſtate. Lewis hauled and pulled the map on one ſide, and Frog and I on the other, till we had like to have torne the parchment to pieces. At laſt Lewis pulled out a pair of great taylors ſheers, and clipt a corner for himſelf, which he ſaid was a manor that lay convenient for him, and left Frog and me the reſt to diſpoſe of as we pleaſed. We were overjoyed to think Lewis was contented with ſo little, not ſmelling what was at the bottom of the plot. There happened, indeed, an incident that gave us ſome diſturbance: a cunning fellow, one of my ſervants, two days after, peeping through the key-hole, obſerved, that old Lewis had ſtole away our part of the map, and ſaw him fiddling

and

and turning the map from one corner to the other, trying to join the two pieces together again: he was muttering ſomething to himſelf, which we did not well hear, only theſe words, " 'Tis great pity, " 'tis great pity!" My ſervant added, that he believed this had ſome ill meaning. I told him he was a coxcomb, always pretending to be wiſer than his companions: Lewis and I are good friends, he's an honeſt fellow, and I dare ſay will ſtand to his bargain. The ſequel of the ſtory proved this fellow's ſuſpicion to be too well grounded; for Lewis revealed our whole ſecret to the deceaſed lord Strutt*, who, in reward to his treachery, and revenge to Frog and me, ſettled his whole eſtate upon the preſent Philip Baboon. Then we underſtood what he meant by piecing the map.

Mrs. BULL. And was you ſurprized at this? Had not lord Strutt reaſon to be angry? Would you have been contented to have been ſo uſed yourſelf?

J. BULL. Why truly, wife, it was not eaſily reconciled to the common methods; but then it was the faſhion to do ſuch things. I have read of your golden age, your ſilver age, &c.: one might juſtly call this the age of lawyers. There was hardly a man of ſubſtance in all the country, but had a counterfeit that pretended to his eſtate†. As the philoſophers ſay, that there is a duplicate of

* It is ſuſpected that the French king intended to take the whole, and that he revealed the ſecret to the court of Spain, upon which the will was made in favour of his grandſon.

† Several Pretenders at that time.

every

every terreſtrial animal at ſea, ſo it was in this age of the lawyers, there was at leaſt two of every thing; nay, on my conſcience, I think there were three eſquire Hackums * at one time. In ſhort, it was uſual for a parcel of fellows to meet, and diſpoſe of the whole eſtates in the country: "This "lies convenient for me, Tom: thou wouldſt do "more good with that, Dick, than the old fellow "that has it." So to law they went with the true owners; the lawyers got well by it; every body elſe was undone. It was a common thing for an honeſt man, when he came home at night, to find another fellow domineering in his family, hectoring his ſervants, calling for ſupper, and pretending to go to bed to his wife. In every houſe you might obſerve two Soſias quarrelling who was maſter. For my own part, I am ſtill afraid of the ſame treatment, and that I ſhould find ſomebody behind my counter, ſelling my broad cloth.

Mrs. BULL. There is a ſort of fellows, they call banterers and bamboozlers, that play ſuch tricks; but it ſeems, theſe fellows were in earneſt.

J. BULL. I begin to think, that juſtice is a better rule than conveniency, for all ſome people make ſo ſlight of it.

* Kings of Poland.

CHAP. VII.

Of the hard ſhifts Mrs. Bull *was put to, to preſerve the manor of* Bullock's Hatch; *with Sir* Roger's *method to keep off importunate duns* *.

AS John Bull and his wife were talking together, they were ſurprized with a ſudden knocking at the door. "Thoſe wicked ſcriveners "and lawyers, no doubt," quoth John; and ſo it was: ſome aſking for the money he owed, and others warning to prepare for the approaching term. "What a curſed life do I lead!" quoth John. "Debt is like deadly ſin: for God's "ſake, Sir Roger, get me rid of the fellows." "I'll warrant you," quoth Sir Roger; "leave "them to me." And indeed it was pleaſant enough to obſerve Sir Roger's method with theſe importunate duns; his ſincere friendſhip for John Bull made him ſubmit to many things for his ſervice, which he would have ſcorned to have done for himſelf. Sometimes he would ſtand at the door with his long ſtaff to keep off the duns, till

* After the diſſolution of the parliament, the ſinking miniſtry endeavoured to ſupport themſelves by propagating a notion, that the public credit would ſuffer, if the lord treaſurer Godolphin was removed: the dread of this event produced it: the monied men began to ſell their ſhares in the bank; the governor, deputy governor, and two directors, applied to the Queen to prevent the change; the alarm became general, and all the public funds gradually ſunk. Perhaps, by Bullock's Hatch, the author meant the crown lands. See p. 172.

John

John got out at the back-door *. When the lawyers and tradeſmen brought extravagant bills, Sir Roger uſed to bargain before-hand for leave to cut off a quarter of a yard in any part of the bill he pleaſed; he wore a pair of ſciſſars in his pocket for this purpoſe, and would ſnip it off ſo nicely as you cannot imagine. Like a true goldſmith, he kept all your holidays; there was not one wanting in his calendar: when ready money was ſcarce, he would ſet them a-telling a thouſand pounds in ſixpences, groats, and three-penny pieces. It would have done your heart good to have ſeen him charge through an army of lawyers, attorneys, clerks, and tradeſmen; ſometimes with ſword in hand, at other times nuzzling like an eel in the mud. When a fellow ſtuck like a bur, that there was no ſhaking him off, he uſed to be mighty inquiſitive about the health of his uncles and aunts in the country; he could call them all by their names, for he knew every body, and could talk to them in their own way. The extremely impertinent he would ſend away to ſee ſome ſtrange ſight, as the dragon of Hockley in the Hole; or bid him call the thirtieth of next February. Now and then you would ſee him in the kitchen, weighing the beef and butter †; paying ready money, that the maids might not run a-tick at the market; and the butchers, by bribing them, ſell damaged and light meat. Another time he would ſlip into the cellar, and gauge the caſks. In his leiſure minutes,

* Manners of the earl of Oxford.

† Some regulations as to the purveyance in the Queen's family.

he

he was poſting his books, and gathering in his debts. Such frugal methods were neceſſary, where money was ſo ſcarce, and duns ſo numerous. All this while John kept his credit, could ſhew his head both at 'Change and Weſtminſter-hall; no man proteſted his bill, nor refuſed his bond; only the ſharpers and the ſcriveners, the lawyers and other clerks, pelted Sir Roger as he went along. The ſquirters were at it with their kennel-water, for they were mad for the loſs of their bubble, and that they could not get him to mortgage the manor of Bullock's Hatch. Sir Roger ſhook his ears, and nuzzled along, well ſatisfied within himſelf, that he was doing a charitable work, in reſcuing an honeſt man from the claws of harpies and blood-ſuckers. Mrs. Bull did all that an affectionate wife, and a good houſewife, could do; yet the boundaries of virtues are indiviſible lines; it is impoſſible to march up cloſe to the frontiers of frugality, without entering the territories of parſimony. Your good houſewives are apt to look into the minuteſt things; therefore ſome blamed Mrs. Bull for new heel-piecing of her ſhoes, grudging a quarter of a pound of ſoap and ſand to ſcour the rooms *; but eſpecially, that ſhe would not allow her maids and apprentices the benefit of John Bunyan, the London Apprentice, or the Seven Champions in the black letter †.

* Too great ſavings in the houſe of commons.

† Reſtraining the liberty of the preſs by act of parliament.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

A continuation of the converſation between John Bull *and his wife.*

Mrs. BULL. IT is a moſt ſad life we lead, my dear, to be ſo teazed, paying intereſt for old debts, and ſtill contracting new ones. However, I don't blame you for vindicating your honour, and chaſtiſing old Lewis: to curb the inſolent, protect the oppreſſed, recover one's own, and defend what one has, are good effects of the law: the only thing I want to know, is, how you came to make an end of your money, before you finiſhed your ſuit.

J. BULL. I was told by the learned in the law, that my ſuit ſtood upon three firm pillars: more money for more law; more law for more money; and, no compoſition. More money for more law, was plain to a demonſtration; for who can go to law without money? and it was plain, that any man that has money, may have law for it. The third was as evident as the other two; for what compoſition could be made with a rogue, that never kept a word he ſaid?

Mrs. BULL. I think you are moſt likely to get out of this labyrinth by the ſecond door, by want of ready money to purchaſe this precious commodity: but you ſeem not only to have bought too much of it, but have paid too dear for what you bought; elſe, how was it poſſible to run ſo much in debt, when at this very time, the yearly income

of what is mortgaged to thoſe uſurers, would diſcharge Hocus's bills, and give you your belly-full of law for all your life, without running one ſixpence in debt? You have been bred up to buſineſs; I ſuppoſe you can cypher; I wonder you never uſed your pen and ink.

J. BULL. Now you urge me too far; prithee, dear wife, hold thy tongue. Suppoſe a young heir, heedleſs, raw, and unexperienced, full of ſpirit and vigour, with a favourite paſſion, in the hands of money ſcriveners: ſuch fellows are like your wire-drawing mills; if they get hold of a man's finger, they will pull in his whole body at laſt, till they ſqueeze the heart, blood, and guts out of him *. When I wanted money, half a dozen of theſe fellows were always waiting in my antichamber with their ſecurities ready drawn. I was tempted with the ready; ſome farm or other went to pot. I received with one hand, and paid it away with the other to lawyers, that, like ſo many hell-hounds, were ready to devour me. Then the rogues would plead poverty, and ſcarcity of money, which always ended in receiving ninety for the hundred. After they had got poſſeſſion of my beſt rents, they were able to ſupply me with my own money. But what was worſe, when I looked into the ſecurities, there was no clauſe of redemption.

Mrs. BULL. No clauſe of redemption, ſay you? that's hard.

* Methods of preying upon the neceſſities of the government.

J. BULL. No great matter, for I cannot pay them. They had got a worſe trick than that; the ſame man bought and ſold to himſelf, paid the money, and gave the acquittance; the ſame man was butcher and grazier, brewer and butler, cook and poulterer. There is ſomething ſtill worſe than all this; there came twenty bills upon me at once, which I had given money to diſcharge; I was like to be pulled to pieces by brewer, butcher, and baker; even my herb-woman dunned me as I went along the ſtreets. (Thanks to my friend Sir Roger, elſe I muſt have gone to gaol.) When I aſked the meaning of this, I was told, the money went to the lawyers; counſel won't tick, Sir; Hocus was urging: my book-keeper ſat ſotting all day, playing at put and all-fours: in ſhort, by griping uſurers, devouring lawyers, and negligent ſervants, I am brought to this paſs.

Mrs. BULL. This was hard uſage! but, methinks, the leaſt reflection might have retrieved you.

J. BULL. It is true: yet conſider my circumſtances; my honour was engaged, and I did not know how to get out; beſides, I was for five years often drunk, always muddled; they carried me from tavern to tavern, to ale-houſes and brandy-ſhops, and brought me acquainted with ſuch ſtrange dogs*! "There goes the prettieſt fellow "in the world," ſays one, "for managing a jury; "make him yours. There's another can pick you "up witneſſes: ſerjeant ſuch-a-one has a ſilver "tongue at the bar." I believe, in time I ſhould

* Hiring ſtill more troops.

have retained every ſingle perſon within the inns of court. The night after a trial I treated the lawyers, their wives, and daughters, with fiddles, hautboys, drums, and trumpets. I was always hot-headed; then they placed me in the middle, the attorneys and their clerks dancing about me, whooping, and hollowing, "Long "live John Bull, the glory and ſupport of the "law!"

Mrs. BULL. Really, huſband, you went through a very notable courſe.

J. BULL. One of the things, that firſt alarmed me, was, that they ſhewed a ſpite againſt my poor old mother*. "Lord," quoth I, "what makes you "ſo jealous of a poor, old, innocent gentlewoman, "that minds only her prayers, and her practice of "piety: ſhe never meddles in any of your con-"cerns?" "Foh, ſay they, to ſee a handſome, briſk, "genteel, young fellow, ſo much governed by a "doating old woman! why don't you go and "ſuck the bubby? Do you conſider ſhe keeps "you out of a good jointure? She has the beſt "of your eſtate ſettled upon her for a rent-charge: "hang her, old thief, turn her out of doors, ſeize "her land, and let her go to law if ſhe dares." "Soft and fair, gentlemen, quoth I; my mother's "my mother; our family are not of an unnatural "temper. Though I don't take all her advice, I "won't ſeize her jointure; long may ſhe enjoy it, "good woman; I don't grudge it her; ſhe allows

* Railing againſt the church.

" me now-and-then a brace of hundreds for my " law-ſuit; that's pretty fair." About this time the old gentlewoman fell ill of an odd ſort of a diſtemper *; it began with a coldneſs and numbneſs in her limbs, which by degrees affected the nerves (I think the phyſicians called them) ſeized the brain, and at laſt ended in a lethargy. It betrayed itſelf at firſt in a ſort of indifference and careleſſneſs in all her actions, coldneſs to her beſt friends, and an averſion to ſtir or go about the common offices of life. She, that was the cleanlieſt creature in the world, never ſhrunk now, if you ſet a cloſe-ſtool under her noſe. She, that would ſometimes rattle off her ſervants pretty ſharply, now, if ſhe ſaw them drink, or heard them talk profanely, never took any notice of it. Inſtead of her uſual charities to deſerving perſons, ſhe threw away her money upon roaring, ſwearing bullies and beggars, that went about the ſtreets †. " What is the matter with the old gentlewoman," ſaid every body, " ſhe never uſed to do in this " manner?" At laſt the diſtemper grew more violent, and threw her downright into raving fits ‡; in which ſhe ſhrieked out ſo loud, that ſhe diſturbed the whole neighbourhood. In her fits ſhe called upon one Sir William §: " Oh! Sir Wil- " liam, thou haſt betrayed me! killed me! ſtab-

* Careleſſneſs in forms and diſcipline.

† Diſpoſing of ſome preferments to libertine and nprincipled perſons.

‡ The too violent clamour about the danger of the church.

§ Sir William, a cant name of Sir Humphry's for Lord Treaſurer Godolphin.

" bed

" bed me! ſold me to the cuckold of Dover-ſtreet!
" See, ſee Clum with his bloody knife! ſeize him,
" ſeize him, ſtop him! Behold the fury with
" her hiſſing ſnakes! Where's my ſon John? Is
" he well, is he well? poor man! I pity him;"
and abundance more of ſuch ſtrange ſtuff, that nobody could make any thing of. I knew little of the matter; for when I enquired about her health, the anſwer was, " that ſhe was in a good moderate
" way." Phyſicians were ſent for in haſte: Sir Roger, with great difficulty, brought Ratcliff; Garth came upon the firſt meſſage. There were ſeveral others called in; but, as uſual upon ſuch occaſions, they differed ſtrangely at the conſultation. At laſt they divided into two parties, one ſided with Garth, the other with Ratcliff*. Dr. GARTH: " This caſe ſeems to me to be plainly
" hyſterical; the old woman is whimſical; it is a
" common thing for your old women to be ſo;
" I'll pawn my life, bliſters, with the ſteel diet,
" will recover her." Others ſuggeſted ſtrong purging, and letting of blood, becauſe ſhe was plethoric. Some went ſo far as to ſay the old woman was mad, and nothing would be better than a little corporal correction. RATCLIFF: " Gen-
" tlemen, you are miſtaken in this caſe; it is
" plainly an acute diſtemper, and ſhe cannot hold
" out three days, unleſs ſhe is ſupported with
" ſtrong cordials." I came into the room with a good deal of concern, and aſked them, what they

* Garth, the low-church party; Ratcliff, high-church party.

thought of my mother? "In no manner of dan-"ger, I vow to Gad," quoth Garth, "the old "woman is hyſterical, fanciful, Sir, I vow to "Gad." "I tell you, Sir," ſays Ratcliff, "ſhe "cannot live three days to an end, unleſs there is "ſome very effectual courſe taken with her; ſhe "has a malignant fever." Then fool, puppy, and blockhead, were the beſt words they gave. I could hardly reſtrain them from throwing the ink-bottles at one another's heads. I forgot to tell you, that one party of the phyſicians deſired, I would take my ſiſter Peg into the houſe to nurſe her, but the old gentlewoman would not hear of that. At laſt, one phyſician aſked, if the lady had ever been uſed to take laudanum? Her maid anſwered, not that ſhe knew; but indeed there was a High-German liveryman of hers, one Yan Ptſchirn-ſooker*, that gave her a ſort of quack-powder. The phyſician deſired to ſee it: "Nay," ſays he, "there is opium in this, I am ſure."

Mrs. BULL. I hope you examined a little into this matter.

J. BULL. I did, indeed, and diſcovered a great myſtery of iniquity. The witneſſes made oath, That they had heard ſome of the liverymen† frequently railing at their miſtreſs. "They ſaid, ſhe "was a troubleſome, fiddle-faddle old woman, and "ſo ceremonious, that there was no bearing of "her. They were ſo plagued with bowing and

* Yan Ptſchirnſooker, a biſhop at that time, a great dealer in politics and phyſic.

† The Clergy.

"cringing

" cringing as they went in and out of the room, " that their backs ached. She uſed to ſcold at one " for his dirty ſhoes, at another for his greaſy " hair, and not combing his head: that ſhe was ſo " paſſionate and fiery in her temper, that there " was no living with her; ſhe wanted ſomething " to ſweeten her blood: that they never had a " quiet night's reſt, for getting up in the morning " to early ſacraments; they wiſhed they could find " ſome way or another to keep the old woman " quiet in her bed." Such diſcourſes were often overheard among the liverymen, while the ſaid Yan Ptſchirnſooker had undertaken this matter. A maid made affidavit, " That ſhe had ſeen the " ſaid Yan Ptſchirnſooker, one of the liverymen, " frequently making up of medicines, and admi- " niſtering them to all the neighbours; that ſhe " ſaw him one morning make up the powder, " which her miſtreſs took; that ſhe had the curi- " oſity to aſk him, whence he had the ingredients? " They come," ſays he, " from ſeveral parts of de " world; dis I have from Geneva, dat from Rome, dis " white powder from Amſterdam, and de red from " Edinburgh; but de chief ingredient of all comes " from Turkey." It was likewiſe proved, that the ſaid Yan Ptſchirnſooker had been frequently ſeen at the Roſe with Jack, who was known to bear an inveterate ſpite to his miſtreſs: That he brought a certain powder to his miſtreſs, which the examinant believes to be the ſame, and ſpoke the following words: " Madam, here is grand ſecret van " de world, my ſweetening powder, it does tem-

" perate de humour, deſpel de wint, and cure de " vapour; it lullet and quietet de animal ſpirits, " procuring reſt and pleaſant dreams: it is de in- " fallible receipt for de ſcurvy, all heats in de " bloot, and breaking out upon de ſkin: it is de " true bloot-ſtancher, ſtopping all fluxes of de " bloot: if you do take dis, you will never ail any " ding; it will cure you of all diſeaſes:" and abundance more to this purpoſe, which the examinant does not remember.

John Bull was interrupted in his ſtory by a porter, that brought him a letter from Nicholas Frog, which is as follows.

CHAP. IX.

* *A Copy of* Nic. Frog's *letter to* John Bull.

[John Bull *reads.*]

FRIEND JOHN,

" WHAT Schellum is this, that makes thee " jealous of thy old friend Nicholas? Haſt " thou forgot how ſome years ago he took thee " out of the † ſpunging-houſe?" ['Tis true my friend Nic. did ſo, and I thank him; but he made me pay a ſwinging reckoning.] " Thou beginn'ſt now to " repent thy bargain, that thou waſt ſo fond of; " and if thou durſt, would'ſt forſwear thy own " hand and ſeal. Thou ſay'ſt, that thou haſt pur- " chaſed me too great an eſtate already; when, at " the ſame time, thou know'ſt I have only a mort- " gage: 'tis true, I have poſſeſſion, and the tenants

* A letter from the States General.

† Alluding to the Revolution.

" own

" own me for maſter; but has not Eſquire South " the equity of redemption?" [No doubt, and will redeem it very ſpeedily; poor Nic. has only poſſeſſion, eleven points of the law.] " As for the " *turnpikes I have ſet up, they are for other people, " not for my friend John; I have ordered my ſervant " conſtantly to attend, to let thy carriages through " without paying any thing; only I hope thou wilt " not come too heavy laden to ſpoil my ways. Cer- " tainly I have juſt cauſe of offence againſt thee, " my friend, for ſuppoſing it poſſible that thou and " I ſhould ever quarrel: what houndsfoot is it that " puts theſe whims in thy head? Ten thouſand " laſt of devils haul me, if I don't love thee as I " love my life." [No queſtion, as the devil loves holy water!] " Does not thy own hand and ſeal " oblige thee to purchaſe for me, till I ſay it is " enough? Are not theſe words plain? I ſay it is " not enough. Doſt thou think thy friend Nicho- " las Frog made a child's bargain? Mark the " words of thy contract, *Totâ pecuniâ*, with all thy " money." [Very well! I have purchaſed with my own money, my childrens, and my grandchildrens money, is not that enough? Well, *totâ pecuniâ* let it be, for at preſent I have none at all: he would not have me purchaſe with other people's money ſure? ſince *totâ pecuniâ* is the bargain, I think it is plain, no more money, no more purchaſe.] " And whatever the world may ſay, Ni- " cholas Frog is but a poor man in compariſon of " the rich, the opulent John Bull, great clothier of

* The Dutch prohibition of trade.

" the

" the world. I have had many loſſes, ſix of my " beſt ſheep were drowned, and the water has come " into my cellar, and ſpoiled a pipe of my beſt " brandy: it would be a more friendly act in thee " to carry a brief about the country to repair the " loſſes of thy poor friend. Is it not evident to all " the world, that I am ſtill hemmed in by Lewis " Baboon? Is he not juſt upon my borders?" [And ſo he will be, if I purchaſe a thouſand acres more, unleſs he get ſomebody betwixt them.] " I " tell thee, friend John, thou haſt flatterers, that " perſuade thee that thou art a man of buſineſs; do " not believe them: if thou would'ſt ſtill leave thy " affairs in my hands, thou ſhould'ſt ſee how " handſomely I would deal by thee. That ever " thou ſhould'ſt be dazzled with the inchanted " iſlands, and mountains of gold, that old Lewis " promiſes thee! 'Dſwounds! why doſt thou not " lay out thy money to purchaſe a place at court, " of honeſt Iſrael? I tell thee, thou muſt not ſo " much as think of a compoſition." [Not think of a compoſition, that's hard indeed: I can't help thinking of it, if I would.] " 'Thou complain'ſt of " want of money; let thy wife and daughters burn " the gold lace of their petticoats; ſell thy fat cattle; " retrench but a ſirloin of beef and a peck-loaf in a " week from thy gormandizing guts." [Retrench my beef, a dog! Retrench my beef! then it is plain the raſcal has an ill deſign upon me, he would ſtarve me.] " Mortgage thy manor of Bullock's- " hatch, or pawn thy crop for ten years." [A rogue! part with my country-ſeat, my patrimony, all that I have

I have left in the world; I'll ſee him hanged firſt.] "Why haſt thou changed thy attorney? Can any "man manage thy cauſe better for thee?" [Very pleaſant! becauſe a man has a good attorney, he muſt never make an end of his law-ſuit.] "Ah "John! John! I wiſh thou knew'ſt thy own "mind; thou art as fickle as the wind. I tell "thee, thou hadſt better let this compoſition alone, "or leave it to thy

Loving friend,

NIC. FROG.

CHAP. X.

Of ſome extraordinary * *things, that paſſed at the* Salutation *tavern, in the conference between* Bull, Frog, *Eſquire* South, *and* Lewis Baboon.

FROG had given his word, that he would meet the above-mentioned company at the Salutation to talk of this agreement. Though he durſt not directly break his appointment, he made many a ſhuffling excuſe; one time he pretended to be ſeized with the gout in his right knee; then he got a great cold, that had ſtruck him deaf of one ear; afterwards two of his coach-horſes fell ſick, and he durſt not go by water for fear of catching an ague. John would take no excuſe, but hurried him away: "Come

* The treaty of Utrecht: the difficulty to get them to meet. When met, the Dutch would not ſpeak their ſentiments, nor the French deliver in their propoſals. The houſe of Auſtria talked very high.

"Nic.

" Nic. ſays he, let's go and hear at leaſt what this " old fellow has to propoſe! I hope there's no hurt " in that. Be it ſo, quoth Nic. but if I catch any " harm, woe be to you; my wife and children will " curſe you as long as they live.". When they were come to the Salutation, John concluded all was ſure then, and that he ſhould be troubled no more with law affairs; he thought every body as plain and ſincere as he was. " Well, neighbours, " quoth he, let's now make an end of all matters, " and live peaceably together for the time to come; " if every body is as well inclined as I, we ſhall " quickly come to the upſhot of our affair." And ſo pointing to Frog to ſay ſometing, to the great ſurprize of all the company, Frog was ſeized with the dead palſy in the tongue. John began to aſk him ſome plain queſtions, and whooped and hollowed in his ear. " Let's come to the point. Nic! " Who wouldeſt thou have to be Lord Strutt? " Wouldeſt thou have Philip Baboon?" Nic. ſhook his head, and ſaid nothing. " Wilt thou then have " Eſquire South to be Lord Strutt?" Nic. ſhook his head a ſecond time. " Then who the devil wilt thou have? ſay ſomething or another." Nic. opened his mouth, and pointed to his tongue, and cried, " A, a, a, a! which was as much as to ſay, he could not ſpeak. John Bull.] " Shall I ſerve " Philip Baboon with broad-cloth, and accept of " the compoſition that he offers, with the liberty " of his parks and fiſh-ponds?" Then Nic. roared like a bull, " O, o, o, o!" John Bull.] " If thou wilt not let me have them, wilt thou take them thyſelf?"

thyſelf?" Then Nic. grinned, cackled, and laughed, till he was like to kill himſelf, and ſeemed to be ſo pleaſed, that he fell a friſking and dancing about the room. John Bull.] "Shall I leave all this mat-
"ter to thy management, Nic. and go about my
"buſineſs?" Then Nic. got up a glaſs, and drank to John, ſhaking him by the hand, till he had like to have ſhook his ſhoulder out of joint. JohnBull.] "I underſtand thee, Nic. but I ſhall make thee
"ſpeak before I go." Then Nic. put his finger in his cheek, and made it cry Buck; which was as much as to ſay, I care not a farthing for thee. John Bull.] "I have done, Nic. if thou wilt not
"ſpeak, I'll make my own terms with old Lewis
"here." Then Nic. lolled out his tongue, and turned up his bum to him; which was as much as to ſay, Kiſs—

John perceiving that Frog would not ſpeak, turns to old Lewis: "Since we cannot make this obſti-
"nate fellow ſpeak, Lewis, pray condeſcend a
"little to his humour, and ſet down thy meaning
"upon paper, that he may anſwer it in another
"ſcrap.

"I am infinitely ſorry, quoth Lewis, that it
"happens ſo unfortunately; for playing a little at
"cudgels t'other day, a fellow has given me ſuch
"a rap over the right arm, that I am quite lame:
"I have loſt the uſe of my fore finger and my
"thumb, ſo that I cannot hold my pen.

John Bull. "That's all one, let me write for
"you.

Lewis.

Lewis. "But I have a misfortune, that I cannot "read any body's hand but my own.

John Bull. "Try what you can do with your "left hand.

Lewis. "That's impoſſible; it will make ſuch "a ſcrawl, that it will not be legible."

As they were talking of this matter, in came eſquire South *, all dreſſed up in feathers and ribbons, ſtark ſtaring mad, brandiſhing his ſword, as if he would have cut off their heads; crying, "Room, "room, boys, for the grand eſquire of the world! "the flower of eſquires! What! covered in my "preſence? I'll cruſh your ſouls, and crack you "like lice?" With that he had like to have ſtruck John Bull's hat into the fire; but John, who was pretty ſtrong-fiſted, gave him ſuch a ſqueeze as made his eyes water. He went on ſtill in his mad pranks; "When I am lord of the univerſe, the "ſun ſhall proſtrate and adore me! Thou, Frog, "ſhalt be my bailiff; Lewis my taylor; and thou, "John Bull, ſhalt be my fool!"

All this while Frog laughed in his ſleeve, gave the eſquire t'other noggan of brandy, and clapped him on the back, which made him ten times madder.

Poor John ſtood in amaze, talking thus to himſelf: "Well, John, thou art got into rare com-"pany! One has a dumb devil, t'other a mad "devil, and the third a ſpirit of infirmity. An "honeſt man has a fine time on't among ſuch rogues.

* The Archduke was now become Emperor of Germany, being unanimouſly elected upon the death of Joſeph the firſt.

"What

"What art thou aſking of them, after all? Some "mighty boon one would think! only to ſit quietly "at thy own fire-ſide. 'Sdeath, what have I to "do with ſuch fellows! John Bull, after all his "loſſes and croſſes, can live better without them, "than they can without him.. Would to God I "lived a thouſand leagues off them! but the devil's "in't, John Bull is in, and John Bull muſt get "out as well as he can."

As he was talking to himſelf, he obſerved Frog and old Lewis edging * towards one another to whiſper; ſo that John was forced to ſit with his arms a-kimbo to keep them aſunder.

Some people adviſed John to blood Frog under the tongue, or take away his bread and butter, which would certainly make him ſpeak; to give eſquire South hellebore; as for Lewis, ſome were for emollient pulteſſes, others for opening his arm with an inciſion-knife.

† CHAP. XI.

The apprehending, examination, and impriſonment of Jack *for ſuſpicion of poiſoning.*

THE attentive reader cannot have forgot, that the ſtory of Yan Ptſchirnſooker's powder was interrupted by a meſſage from Frog. I have a natural

* Some attempts of ſecret negociation between the French and the Dutch.

† The receiving the holy ſacrament as adminiſtered by the church of England once at leaſt in every year, having been made a neceſſary qualification

tural compaſſion for curioſity, being much troubled with the diſtemper myſelf; therefore to gratify that uneaſy itching ſenſation in my reader, I have procured the following account of that matter.

Yan Ptſchirnſooker came off (as rogues uſually do upon ſuch occaſions) by peaching his partner; and being extremely forward to bring him to the gallows. Jack * was accuſed as the contriver of all the roguery. And indeed it happened unfortunately for the poor fellow, that he was known to bear a moſt inveterate ſpite againſt the old gentlewoman; and conſequently, that never any ill accident happened to her, but he was ſuſpected to be at the bottom of it. If ſhe pricked her finger, Jack, to be ſure, laid the pin in the way; if ſome noiſe in the ſtreet diſturbed her reſt, who could it be but Jack in ſome of his nocturnal rambles? If a ſervant ran away, Jack had debauched him: every idle tittle-tattle that went about, Jack was always ſuſpected for the author of it: however, all was nothing to this laſt affair of the temperating, moderating powder.

qualification for places of truſt and profit, many of the Diſſenters came to the altar merely for this purpoſe. A bill to prevent this practice had been three times brought into the houſe and rejected, under the title of "A bill to prevent Occaſional Conformity." But the Earl of Nottingham having brought it in a fourth time under another name, and with the addition of ſuch clauſes as were ſaid to enlarge the toleration, and to be a further ſecurity to the Proteſtant ſucceſſion, the Whigs, whoſe cauſe the Earl then appeared to eſpouſe, were perſuaded to concur; ſome, becauſe they were indeed willing that the bill ſhould paſs, and others, becauſe they believed the Earl of Oxford would at laſt procure it to be thrown out. The four following chapters contain the hiſtory of this tranſaction.

* All the misfortunes of the church charged upon the Preſbyterian party.

The

The hue and cry went after Jack to apprehend him dead or alive, where-ever he could be found. The conſtables looked out for him in all his uſual haunts; but to no purpoſe. Where d'ye think they found him at laſt? Even ſmoaking his pipe very quietly at his brother Martin's; from whence he was carried with a vaſt mob at his heels before the worſhipful Mr. juſtice Overdo. Several of his neighbours made oath, * that of late the priſoner had been obſerved to lead a very diſſolute life, renouncing even his uſual hypocriſy, and pretences to ſobriety: that he frequented taverns and eating-houſes, and had been often guilty of drunkenneſs and gluttony at my lord-mayor's table: that he had been ſeen in the company of lewd women: that he had transferred his uſual care of the engroſſed copy of his father's will, to bank bills, orders for tallies, and debentures †: theſe he now affirmed, with more literal truth, to be ‡ meat, drink, and cloth, the philoſopher's ſtone, and the univerſal medicine: that he was ſo far from ſhewing his cuſtomary reverence to the will, that he kept company with thoſe, that called his father a cheating rogue, and his will a forgery §: that he not only ſat quietly and heard his father railed at, but often chimed in with the diſcourſe, and hugged the authors as his boſom friends ‖: That inſtead of aſking for blows

* The manners of the Diſſenters changed from their former ſtrictneſs,

† Dealing much in ſtock-jobbing.

‡ Tale of a Tub.

§ Herding with Deiſts and Atheiſts.

‖ Tale of a Tub.

at the corners of the ſtreets, he now beſtowed them as plentifully as he begged them before. In ſhort, that he was grown a mere rake; and had nothing left in him of old Jack, except his ſpite to John Bull's mother.

Another witneſs made oath, That Jack had been overheard bragging of a * trick he had found out to manage the old formal jade, as he uſed to call her. "Damn this numb-ſkull of mine, quoth he, that I "could not light on it ſooner. As long as I go in "this ragged tattered coat, I am ſo well known, "that I am hunted away from the old woman's "door by every barking cur about the houſe; they "bid me defiance. There's no doing miſchief as "an open enemy, I muſt find ſome way or other "of getting within doors, and then I ſhall have "better opportunities of playing my pranks, beſide "the benefit of good keeping."

Two witneſſes † ſwore, that ſeveral years ago, there came to their miſtreſs's door a young fellow in a tattered coat, that went by the name of Timothy Trim, whom they did in their conſcience being to be the very priſoner, reſembling him in ſhape, ſtature, and the features of his countenance: that the ſaid Timothy Trim being taken into the family, clapped their miſtreſs's livery over his own tattered coat: that the ſaid Timothy was extremely officious about their miſtreſs's perſon, endeavouring

* Getting into places and church preferments by occaſional conformity.

† Betraying the intereſts of the church, when got into preferments.

by

by flattery and tale-bearing to ſet her againſt the reſt of the ſervants: no body was ſo ready to fetch any thing that was wanted, to reach what was dropt: that he uſed to ſhove and elbow his fellow-ſervants to get near his miſtreſs, eſpecially when money was a paying or receiving; then he was never out of the way: that he was extremely diligent about every body's buſineſs, but his own: that the ſaid Timothy, while he was in the family, uſed to be playing roguiſh tricks; when his miſtreſs's back was turned, he would loll out his tongue, make mouths, and laugh at her, walking behind her like Harelequin, ridiculing her motions and geſtures; but if his miſtreſs looked about, he put on a grave, demure countenance, as if he had been in a fit of devotion: that he uſed often to trip up ſtairs ſo ſmoothly, that you could not hear him tread, and put all things out of order: that he would pinch the children and ſervants, when he met them in the dark, ſo hard, that he left the print of his fore finger and his thumb in black and blue, and then ſlink into a corner, as if no body had done it: out of the ſame malicious deſign he uſed to lay chairs and joint-ſtools in their way, that they might break their noſes by falling over them: the more young and unexperienced he uſed to teach to talk ſaucily, and call names: during his ſtay in the family, there was much plate miſſing; being catched with a couple of ſilver ſpoons in his pocket, with their handles wrenched off, he ſaid, he was only going to carry them to the goldſmith's to be mended: that the ſaid Timothy was hated by all the honeſt

ſervants for his ill-conditioned, ſplenetick tricks, but eſpecially for his ſlanderous tongue; traducing them to their miſtreſs, as drunkards, thieves, and whore-maſters: that the ſaid Timothy by lying ſtories uſed to ſet all the family together by the ears, taking delight to make them fight and quarrel; * particularly one day ſitting at table, he ſpoke words to this effect: "I am of opinion, quoth he, "that little ſhort fellows, ſuch as we are, have "better hearts, and could beat the tall fellows; I "wiſh it came to a fair trial; I believe theſe long "fellows, as ſightly as they are, ſhould find their "jackets well thwacked."

A parcel of tall fellows, who thought themſelves affronted by the diſcourſe, took up the quarrel, and to't they went, the tall men and the low men, which continues ſtill a faction in the family to the great diſorder of our miſtreſs's affairs: the ſaid Timothy carried this frolick ſo far, that he propoſed to his miſtreſs, that ſhe ſhould entertain no ſervant, that was above four foot ſeven inches high; and for that purpoſe had prepared a gage, by which they were to be meaſured. The good old gentlewoman was not ſo ſimple, as to go into his project; ſhe began to ſmell a rat. "This Trim, quoth ſhe, "is an odd ſort of a fellow; methinks he makes "a ſtrange figure with that ragged, tattered coat, "appearing under his livery; can't he go ſpruce "and clean like the reſt of the ſervants? the fellow

* The original of the diſtinction in the names of Low-churchmen and High-churchmen.

"has

" has a roguiſh leer with him, which I don't like " by any means; beſides, he has ſuch a twang in " his diſcourſe, and an ungraceful way of ſpeaking " through the noſe, that one can hardly underſtand " him; I wiſh the fellow be not tainted with ſome " bad diſeaſe." The witneſſes farther made oath, that the ſaid Timothy lay out a-nights, and went abroad often at unſeaſonable hours; and it was credibly reported, he did buſineſs in another family: that he pretended to have a ſqueamiſh ſtomach, and could not eat at table with the reſt of the ſervants, though this was but a pretence, to provide ſome nice bit for himſelf; that he refuſed to dine upon ſalt-fiſh, only to have an opportunity to eat a calf's head (his favourite diſh) in private; that for all his tender ſtomach, when he was got by himſelf, he could devour capons, turkeys, and ſirloins of beef, like a cormorant.

Two other witneſſes gave the following evidence: That in his officious attendance upon his miſtreſs, he had tried to ſlip a powder into her drink; and that he was once catched endeavouring to ſtifle her with a pillow as ſhe was aſleep: that he and Ptſchirnſooker were often in cloſe conference, and that they uſed to drink together at the Roſe, where it ſeems he was well enough known by his true name of Jack.

The priſoner had little to ſay in his defence; he endeavoured to prove himſelf Alibi; ſo that the trial turned upon this ſingle queſtion, whether the ſaid Timothy Trim and Jack were the ſame perſon? which was proved by ſuch plain tokens, and parti-

cularly by a mole under the left pap, that there was no withſtanding the evidence; therefore the worſhipful Mr. Juſtice committed him, in order to his trial.

CHAP. XII.

How Jack's *friends came to viſit him in priſon, and what advice they gave him.*

JACK hitherto had paſſed in the world for a poor, ſimple, well-meaning, half-witted, crack-brained fellow. People were ſtrangely ſurpriſed to find him in ſuch a roguery; that he ſhould diſguiſe himſelf under a falſe name, hire himſelf out for a ſervant to an old gentlewoman, only for an opportunity to poiſon her. They ſaid, that it was more generous to profeſs open enmity, than under a profound diſſimulation to be guilty of ſuch a ſcandalous breach of truſt, and of the ſacred rights of hoſpitality. In ſhort, the action, was univerſally condemned by his beſt friends; they told him in plain terms, that this was come as a judgment upon him for his looſe life, his gluttony, drunkenneſs, and avarice; for laying aſide his father's will in an old mouldy trunk, and turning ſtock-jobber, newsmonger, and buſy-body, meddling with other people's affairs, ſhaking off his old ſerious friends, and keeping company with buffoons and pickpockets, his father's ſworn enemies: that he had beſt throw himſelf upon the mercy of the court; repent, and change his manners. To ſay truth,

Jack

Jack heard theſe diſcourſes with ſome compunction; however, he reſolved to try what his new acquaintance would do for him: they ſent * Habbakkuk Slyboots, who delivered him the following meſſage, as the peremptory commands of his truſty companions.

HABBAKKUK. Dear Jack, I am ſorry for thy misfortune: matters have not been carried on with due ſecrecy; however we muſt make the beſt of a bad bargain: thou art in the utmoſt jeopardy, that's certain; hang, draw, and quarter, are the gentleſt things they talk of. However, thy faithful friends, ever watchful for thy ſecurity, bid me tell thee, that they have one infallible expedient left to ſave thy life: thou muſt know, we have got into ſome underſtanding with the enemy, by the means of Don Diego; he aſſures us there is no mercy for thee, and that there is only one way left to eſcape; it is indeed ſomewhat out of the common road; however, be aſſured it is the reſult of moſt mature deliberation.

JACK. Prithee tell me quickly, for my heart is ſunk down into the very bottom of my belly.

HAB. It is the unanimous opinion of your friends, that you † make as if you hanged yourſelf; they will give it out that you are quite dead, and convey your body out of priſon in a bier; and John

* Habbakkuk Slyboots, a certain great man who perſuaded the Diſſenters to conſent to the bill againſt Occaſional Conformity, as being for their intereſt.

† Conſent to the bill againſt Occaſional Conformity.

Bull, being buſied with his law-ſuit, will not enquire farther into the matter.

JACK. How d'ye mean, make as if I hanged myſelf?

HAB. Nay, you muſt really hang yourſelf up, in a true genuine rope, that there may appear no trick in it, and leave the reſt to your friends.

JACK. Truly this is a matter of ſome concern; and my friends, I hope, won't take it ill, if I enquire a little into the means by which they intend to deliver me: a rope and a nooſe are no jeſting matters!

HAB. Why ſo miſtruſtful? haſt thou ever found us falſe to thee? I tell thee, there is one ready to cut thee down.

JACK. May I preſume to aſk who it is, that is entruſted with ſo important an office?

HAB. Is there no end of thy how's and thy why's? That's a ſecret.

JACK. A ſecret, perhaps, that I may be ſafely truſted with, for I am not likely to tell it again. I tell you plainly, it is no ſtrange thing for a man, before he hangs himſelf up, to enquire who is to cut him down.

HAB. Thou ſuſpicious creature! if thou muſt needs know it, I tell thee it is * Sir Roger: he has been in tears ever ſince thy misfortune. Don Diego and we have laid it ſo, that he is to be in the next room, and before the rope is well about thy neck,

* It was given out, that the Earl of Oxford would oppoſe the occaſional bill, and ſo loſe his credit with the Tories; and the Diſſenters did believe he would not ſuffer it to paſs.

reſt

reſt ſatisfied, he will break in and cut thee down: fear not, old boy; we'll do it, I'll warrant thee.

JACK. So I muſt hang myſelf up, upon hopes that Sir Roger will cut me down, and all this upon the credit of Don Diego: a fine ſtratagem indeed to ſave my life, that depends upon hanging, Don Diego, and Sir Roger!

HAB. I tell thee there is a myſtery in all this, my friend, a piece of profound policy; if thou kneweſt what good this will do to the common cauſe, thy heart would leap for joy: I am ſure thou wouldſt not delay the experiment one moment.

JACK. This is to the tune of, All for the better. What's your cauſe to me, when I am hanged?

HAB. Refractory mortal; If thou wilt not truſt thy friends, take what follows: know aſſuredly, before next full-moon, that thou wilt be hung up in chains, or thy quarters perching upon the moſt conſpicuous places of the kingdom. Nay, I don't believe they will be contented with hanging; they talk of empaling, or breaking on the wheel; and thou chooſeſt that, before a gentle ſuſpending of thyſelf for one minute. Hanging is not ſo painful a thing as thou imagineſt. I have ſpoke with ſeveral, that have undergone it; they all agree it is no manner of uneaſineſs: be ſure thou take good notice of the ſymptoms, the relation will be curious. It is but a kick or two with thy heels, and a wry mouth or ſo: Sir Roger will be with thee in the twinkling of an eye.

JACK. But what if Sir Roger ſhould not come; will my friends be there to ſuccour me?

HAB.

HAB. Doubt it not; I will provide every thing againſt to-morrow morning; do thou keep thy own ſecret; ſay nothing: I tell thee, it is abſolutely neceſſary for the common good, that thou ſhouldſt go through this operation.

CHAP. XIII.

How Jack *hanged himſelf up by the perſuaſion of his friends, who broke their words, and left his neck in the nooſe.*

JACK was a profeſſed enemy to implicit faith, and yet I dare ſay, it was never more ſtrongly exerted, nor more baſely abuſed, than upon this occaſioned. He was now with his old friends, in the ſtate of a poor disbanded officer after a peace, or rather a wounded ſoldier after a battle; like an old favourite of a cunning miniſter after the job is over; or a decayed beauty to a cloyed lover in queſt of new game; or like a hundred ſuch things, that one ſees every day. There were new intrigues, new views, new projects on foot *; Jack's life was the purchaſe of Diego's friendſhip, much good may it do them. The intereſt of Hocus and Sir William Crawley, which was now more at heart, made this operation upon poor Jack abſolutely neceſſary. You may eaſily gueſs, that his reſt that night was but ſmall, and much diſturbed; however, the re-

* The Earl of Nottingham made the concurrence of the Whigs to bring in and carry this bill one of the conditions of his engaging in their cauſe.

maining

maining part of his time he did not employ (as his cuſtom was formerly) in prayer, meditation, or ſinging a double verſe of a pſalm; but amuſed himſelf with diſpoſing of his bank-ſtock. Many a doubt, many a qualm, overſpread his clouded imagination: "Muſt I then, quoth he, hang up my "own perſonal, natural, individual ſelf, with theſe "two hands! *Durus Sermo!* What if I ſhould be "cut down, as my friends tell me? There is "ſomething infamous in the very attempt; the "world will conclude, I had a guilty conſcience. "Is it poſſible that good man, Sir Roger, can "have ſo much pity upon an unfortunate ſcoun-"drel, that has perſecuted him ſo many years? "No, it cannot be; I don't love favours that paſs "through Don Diego's hands. On the other ſide, "my blood chills about my heart at the thought "of theſe rogues, with their bloody hands grab-"bling in my guts, and pulling out my very en-"trails: hang it, for once I'll truſt my friends." So Jack reſolved; but he had done more wiſely to have put himſelf upon the trial of his country, and made his defence in form; many things happen between the cup and the lip; witneſſes might have been bribed, juries managed, or proſecution ſtopped. But ſo it was, Jack for this time had a ſufficient ſtock of implicit faith, which led him to his ruin, as the ſequel of the ſtory ſhews.

And now the fatal day was come, in which he was to try this hanging experiment. His friends did not fail him at the appointed hour to ſee it put in practice. Habbakkuk brought him a ſmooth,

ſtrong, tough rope, made of many a ply of wholeſome Scandinavian hemp, compactly twiſted together, with a nooſe that ſlipt as glib as a bird-catcher's gin. Jack ſhrunk and grew pale at firſt ſight of it, he handled it, meaſured it, ſtretched it, fixed it againſt the iron bar of the window to try its ſtrength; but no familiarity could reconcile him to it. He found fault with the length, the thickneſs, and the twiſt; nay, the very colour did not pleaſe him. "Will nothing leſs than hanging ſerve," quoth Jack, "Won't my enemies take bail for my good "behaviour? Will they accept of a fine, or be ſa-"tisfied with the pillory and impriſonment, a good "round whipping, or burning in the cheek?"

HAB. Nothing but your blood will appeaſe their rage; make haſte, elſe we ſhall be diſcovered. There's nothing like ſurprizing the rogues: how they will be diſappointed, when they hear that thou haſt prevented their revenge, and hanged thine own ſelf?

JACK. That's true; but what if I ſhould do it in effigies? Is there never an old Pope or Pretender to hang up in my ſtead; we are not ſo unlike, but it may paſs.

HAB. That can never be put upon Sir Roger.

JACK. Are you ſure he is in the next room? Have you provided a very ſharp knife, in caſe of the worſt?

HAB. Doſt take me for a common liar? be ſatisfied, no damage can happen to your perſon; your friends will take care of that.

JACK.

JACK. Mayn't I quilt my rope? It galls my neck ſtrangely: beſides, I don't like this running knot, it holds too tight; I may be ſtifled all of a ſudden.

HAB. Thou haſt ſo many if's and and's; prithee diſpatch; it might have been over before this time.

JACK. But now I think on't, I would fain ſettle ſome affairs, for fear of the worſt: have a little patience.

HAB. There's no having patience, thou art ſuch a faintling, ſilly creature.

JACK. O thou moſt deteſtable, abominable paſſive obedience! did I ever imagine, I ſhould become thy votary in ſo pregnant an inſtance! How will my brother Martin laugh at this ſtory, to ſee himſelf out-done in his own calling? He has taken the doctrine, and left me the practice.

No ſooner had he uttered theſe words, but like a man of true courage, he tied the fatal cord to the beam, fitted the nooſe, and mounted upon the bottom of a tub, the inſide of which he had often graced in his proſperous days. This footſtool Habbakkuk kicked away, and left poor Jack ſwinging, like the pendulum of Paul's clock. The fatal nooſe performed its office, and with the moſt ſtrict ligature ſqueezed the blood into his face, till it aſſumed a purple dye. While the poor man heaved from the very bottom of his belly for breath, Habbakkuk walked with great deliberation into both the upper and lower room to acquaint his friends, who received the news with great temper, and with jeers

and

and ſcoffs, inſtead of pity. "Jack has hanged him-"ſelf, quoth they! let us go and ſee how the poor "rogue ſwings." Then they called Sir Roger. "Sir Roger, quoth Habbakkuk, Jack has hanged "himſelf, make haſte and cut him down." Sir Roger turned firſt one ear, and then t'other, not underſtanding what he ſaid.

HAB. I tell you, Jack has hanged himſelf up.

Sir ROGER. Who's hanged?

HAB. Jack.

Sir ROGER. I thought this had not been hanging day.

HAB. But the poor fellow has hanged himſelf.

Sir ROGER. Then let him hang, I don't wonder at it, the fellow has been mad theſe twenty years. With this he ſlunk away.

Then Jack's friends began to hunch and puſh one another, "Why don't you go, and cut the "poor fellow down? Why don't you? And why "don't you? Not I, quoth one; Not I, quoth "another; Not I, quoth a third; he may hang "'till doomſday before I relieve him." Nay, it is credibly reported, that they were ſo far from ſuccouring their poor friend in this his diſmal circumſtance, the Ptſchirnſooker and ſeveral of his companions went in and pulled him by the legs, and thumped him on the breaſt. Then they began to rail at him for the very thing, which they had adviſed and juſtified before, *viz.* his getting into the old gentlewoman's family, and putting on her livery. The keeper, who performed the laſt office, coming up, found Jack ſwinging with no life in him;

him; he took down the body gently, and laid it on a bulk, and brought out the rope to the company. "This, gentlemen, is the rope that hanged Jack: "what muſt be done with it?" Upon which they ordered it to be laid among the curioſities * of Greſham-College, and it is called Jack's rope to this very day. However, Jack after all had ſome ſmall tokens of life in him, but lies at this time paſt hope of a total recovery, with his head hanging on one ſhoulder, without ſpeech or motion. The coroner's inqueſt ſuppoſing him to be dead, brought him in *Non Compos.*

CHAP. XIV.

The conference between Don Diego *and* John Bull.

DURING the time of the foregoing tranſactions, Don Diego was entertaining John Bull.

D. DIEGO. I hope, Sir, this day's proceeding will convince you of the ſincerity of your old friend Diego, and the treachery of Sir Roger.

J. BULL. What's the matter now?

D. DIEGO. You have been endeavouring, for ſeveral years, to have juſtice done upon that rogue Jack; but what through the remiſſneſs of conſtables, juſtices, and packed juries, he has always found the means to eſcape.

J. BULL. What then?

* Since removed with the Royal Society into Crane-Court, in Fleetſtreet.

D. DIEGO.

D. DIEGO. Conſider then, who is your beſt friend; he that would have brought him to condign puniſhment, or he that has ſaved him. By my perſuaſion Jack had hanged himſelf, if Sir Roger had not cut him down.

J. BULL. Who told you, that Sir Roger has done ſo?

D. DIEGO. You ſeem to receive me coldly; methinks my ſervices deſerve a better return.

J. BULL. Since you value yourſelf upon hanging this poor ſcoundrel, I tell you, when I have any more hanging-work, I'll ſend for thee: I have ſome better employment for Sir Roger: In the mean time, I deſire the poor fellow may be looked after. When he firſt came out of the north country into my family, under the pretended name of Timothy Trim, the fellow ſeemed to mind his loom and his ſpinning-wheel, 'till ſomebody turned his head; then he grew ſo pragmatical, that he took upon him the government of my whole family. I could never order any thing within or without doors, but he muſt be always giving his counſel, forſooth: nevertheleſs, tell him, I will forgive what is paſt; and if he would mind his buſineſs for the future, and not meddle out of his own ſphere, he will find, that John Bull is not of a cruel diſpoſition.

D. DIEGO. Yet all your ſkilful phyſicians ſay, that nothing can recover your mother, but a piece of Jack's liver boiled in her ſoup.

J. BULL. Thoſe are quacks: my mother abhors ſuch cannibals food: ſhe is in perfect health at preſent: I would have given many a good pound to have

have had her ſo well ſome time ago. There are indeed two or three old troubleſome nurſes *, that, becauſe they believe I am tender-hearted, will never let me have a quiet night's reſt with knocking me up: "Oh, Sir, your mother is taken extremely "ill! ſhe is fallen into a fainting fit! ſhe has a "great emptineſs, wants ſuſtenance!" This is only to recommend themſelves for their great care: John Bull, as ſimple as he is, underſtands a little of a pulſe.

CHAP. XV.

The ſequel of the meeting at the † Salutation.

WHERE I think I left John Bull, ſitting between Nic. Frog and Lewis Baboon, with his arms a-kimbo, in great concern to keep Lewis and Nic. aſunder. As watchful as he was, Nic. found the means now and then to ſteal a whiſper, and by a cleanly conveyance under the table to ſlip a ſhort note into Lewis's hand; which Lewis as ſlily put into John's pocket, with a pinch or a jog, to warn him what he was about. John had the curioſity to retire into a corner to peruſe theſe ‡ billet doux of Nic's; wherein he found, that Nic. had uſed great freedoms both with his intereſt and reputation. One contained theſe words: "Dear Lewis, thou

* New clamours about the danger of the church.

† At the congreſs of Utrecht.

‡ Some offers of the Dutch at that time, in order to get the negotiation into their hands.

" ſeeſt clearly, that this blockhead can never bring
" his matters to bear: let thee and me talk to-night
" by ourſelves at the Roſe, and I'll give thee ſatis-
" faction." Another was thus expreſſed; " Friend
" Lewis, Has thy ſenſe quite forſaken thee, to
" make Bull ſuch offers? Hold faſt, part with no-
" thing, and I will give thee a better bargain, I'll
" warrant thee."

In ſome of his billets he told Lewis, " That
" John Bull was under his guardianſhip; that the
" beſt part of his ſervants were at his command;
" that he could have John gagged and bound
" whenever he pleaſed by the people of his own
" family." In all theſe epiſtles, blockhead, dunce, aſs, coxcomb, were the beſt epithets he gave poor John. In others he threatned, " That he *, eſquire
" South, and the reſt of the tradeſmen, would lay
" Lewis down upon his back and beat out his teeth,
" if he did not retire immediately, and break up
" the meeting."

I fancy I need not tell my reader, that John often changed colour as he read, and that his fingers itched to give Nic. a good ſlap on the chops; but he wiſely moderated his cholerick temper. " I
" ſaved this fellow, quoth he, from the gallows,
" when he ran away from his laſt maſter †, be-
" cauſe I thought he was harſhly treated; but the
" rogue was no ſooner ſafe under my protection,

* Threatening that the Allies would carry on the war, without the help of the Engliſh.

† The King of Spain, whoſe yoke the Dutch threw off with the aſſiſtance of the Engliſh.

" than

" than he began to lie, pilfer and ſteal like the de-
" vil *. When I firſt ſet him up in a warm houſe,
" he had hardly put up his ſign, when he began
" to debauch my beſt cuſtomers from me *. Then
" it was his conſtant practice to rob my fiſh-ponds,
" not only to feed his family, but to trade with
" the fiſhmongers: I connived at the fellow, till
" he began to tell me, that they were his as much
" as mine. In my manor of * Eaſtcheap, becauſe
" it lay at ſome diſtance from my conſtant in-
" ſpection, he broke down my fences, robbed my
" orchards, and beat my ſervants. When I uſed
" to reprimand him for his tricks, he would talk
" ſaucily, lie, and brazen it out, as if he had done
" nothing amiſs. Will nothing cure thee of thy
" pranks, Nic? quoth I, I ſhall be forced ſome
" time or other to chaſtiſe thee. The rogue got up
" his cane, and threatened me, and was well
" thwacked for his pains. But I think his beha-
" viour at this time worſt of all; after I have al-
" moſt drowned myſelf to keep his head above wa-
" ter, he would leave me ſticking in the mud,
" truſting to his goodneſs to help me out. After I
" have beggared myſelf with his troubleſome law-
" ſuit, with a pox to him, he takes it in mighty
" dudgeon, becauſe I have brought him here to end
" matters amicably, and becauſe I won't let him
" make me over by deed and indenture as his law-
" ful cully; which to my certain knowledge he has

*** Complaints againſt the Dutch for encroachment in trade, fiſhery, Eaſt-Indies, &c. The war with the Dutch on theſe accounts.

" attempted ſeveral times. But, after all, canſt " thou gather grapes from thorns? Nic. does not " pretend to be a gentleman; he is a tradeſman, a " ſelf-ſeeking wretch; but how cameſt thou to " bear all this, John? The reaſon is plain; thou " conferreſt the benefits, and he receives them; " the firſt produces love, and the laſt ingratitude. " Ah! Nic. Nic. thou art a damn'd dog, that's cer- " tain; thou knoweſt too well, that I will take " care of thee; elſe thou wouldſt not uſe me thus. " I won't give thee up, it is true; but as true as it " is, thou ſhalt not ſell me, according to thy lau- " dable cuſtom." While John was deep in this ſoliloquy, Nic. broke out into the following proteſtation.

GENTLEMEN,

" I believe every body here preſent will allow " me to be a very juſt and diſintereſted perſon. " My friend John Bull here is very angry with me, " forſooth, becauſe I won't agree to his fooliſh bar- " gains. Now I declare to all mankind, I ſhould " be ready to ſacrifice my own concerns to his " quiet; but the care of his intereſt, and that of " the honeſt * tradeſmen that are embarked with " us, keeps me from entering into this compoſi- " tion. What ſhall become of thoſe poor creatures? " The thoughts of their impending ruin diſturbs " my night's reſt, therefore I deſire they may ſpeak " for themſelves. If they are willing to give up " this affair, I ſhan't make two words of it."

* The Allies.

John

John Bull begged him to lay aſide that immoderate concern for him; and withal put him in mind, that the intereſt of thoſe tradeſmen had not ſat quite ſo heavy upon him ſome years ago, on a like occaſion. Nic. anſwered little to that, but immediately pulled out a boatſwain's whiſtle. Upon the firſt whiff, the tradeſmen came jumping into the room, and began to ſurround Lewis, like ſo many yelping curs about a great boar; or, to uſe a modeſter ſimile, like duns at a great lord's levee the morning he goes into the country. One pulled him by his ſleeve, another by the ſkirt, a third hollowed in his ear: they began to aſk him for all that had been taken from their forefathers by ſtealth, fraud, force, or lawful purchaſe: ſome aſked for manors, others for acres, that lay convenient for them; that he would pull down his fences, level his ditches: all agreed in one common demand, that he ſhould be purged, ſweated, vomited, and ſtarved, till he came to a ſizeable bulk, like that of his neighbours: one modeſtly aſked him leave to call him brother; Nic. Frog demanded two things, to be his porter and his fiſhmonger, to keep the keys of his gates, and furniſh the kitchen. John's ſiſter Peg only deſired, that he would let his ſervants ſing pſalms a ſundays. Some deſcended even to the aſking of old cloaths, ſhoes, and boots, broken bottles, tobacco-pipes, and ends of candles.

"Monſieur Bull, quoth Lewis, you ſeem to be "a man of ſome breeding; for God's ſake, uſe "your intereſt with theſe Meſſieurs, that they would

" ſpeak but one at once; for if one had a hundred " pair of hands, and as many tongues, he cannot " ſatisfy them all at this rate." John begged they might proceed with ſome method; then they ſtopped all of a ſudden, and would not ſay a word. " If this be your play," quoth John, " that we " may not be like a Quaker's dumb meeting, let " us begin ſome diverſion; what d' ye think of " rouly-pouly, or a country dance? What if we " ſhould have a match at foot-ball? I am ſure " we ſhall never end matters at this rate."

CHAP. XVI.

How John Bull *and* Nic. Frog *ſettled their accompts.*

J. BULL. DURING this general ceſſation of talk, what if you and I, Nic., ſhould enquire how money-matters ſtand between us?

NIC. FROG. With all my heart, I love exact dealing; and let Hocus audit; he knows how the money was diſburſed.

J. BULL. I am not much for that, at preſent; we'll ſettle it between ourſelves: fair and ſquare, Nic., keeps friends together. There have been laid out in this law-ſuit, at one time, 36000 pounds and 40000 crowns: in ſome caſes I, in others you, bear the greateſt proportion.

NIC. Right: I pay three-fifths of the greateſt number, and you pay two-thirds of the leſſer number;

number; I think this is fair and ſquare, as you call it.

JOHN. Well, go on.

NIC. Two-thirds of 36000 pounds are 24000 pounds for your ſhare, and there remains 12000 for mine. Again, of the 40000 crowns I pay 24000, which is three-fifths, and you pay only 16000, which is two-fifths; 24000 crowns make 6000 pounds; and 16000 crowns make 4000 pounds; 12000 and 6000 make 18000; 24000 and 4000 make 28000. So there are 18000 pounds to my ſhare of the expences, and 28000 to yours.

[After Nic had bambouzled John awhile about the 18000 and the 28000, John called for counters; but what with ſlight of hand, and taking from his own ſcore and adding to John's, Nic. brought the balance always on his own ſide.]

J. BULL. Nay, good friend Nic., though I am not quite ſo nimble in the fingers, I underſtand cyphering as well as you. I will produce you my accompts one by one, fairly writ out of my own books: and here I begin with the firſt. You muſt excuſe me, if I don't pronounce the law-terms right.

[John reads.]

For the expences ordinary of the ſuits, fees, to judges, puny judges, lawyers innumerable of all ſorts.

Of Extraordinaries, as follows *per* accompt.

To eſquire South's accompt for Poſt terminums -
To ditto for Non eſt factums - - -
To ditto for Noli proſequis, Diſcontinuance, and Retraxit - - - - -
For Writs of error - - - -
Suits of Conditions unperformed - -
To Hocus for Dedimus poteſtatem - -
To ditto for a Capias ad computandum - -
To Frog's new tenants *per* accompt to Hocus, for Audita querela's - - - -
On the ſaid account for Writs of ejectment and Diſtringas - - - - -
To Eſquire South's quota for a return of a Non eſt invent. and Nulla habet bona - - -
To —— for a pardon *in forma pauperis* - -
To Jack for a Melius inquirendum upon a Felo de ſe - - - - -
To coach-hire - - - - -
For treats to juries and witneſſes - -

John having read over his articles, with the reſpective ſums, brought in Frog debtor to him upon the balance - - 3382 12 00

Then Nic. Frog pulled his bill out of his pocket, and began to read:

Nicholas Frog's account.

Remains to be deducted out of the former account.

Paid by Nic. Frog, for his ſhare of the ordinary expences of the ſuit - - -
To Hocus for entries of a Rege inconſulto -

To

To John Bull's nephew for a Venire facias, the money not yet all laid out - - -
The coach-hire for my wife and family, and the carriage of my goods during the time of this law-ſuit - - - -
For the extraordinary expences of feeding my family during this law-ſuit - - -
To Major Ab. - - - -
To Major Will. - - - -

And ſumming all up, found due upon the balance by John Bull to Nic. Frog 09 04 06

J. BULL. As for your Venire facias, I have paid you for one already; in the other I believe you will be non-ſuited. I'll take care of my nephew myſelf. Your coach-hire and family charges are moſt unreaſonable deductions; at that rate, I can bring in any man in the world my debtor. But who the devil are thoſe two majors, that conſume all my money? I find they always run away with the balance in all accompts.

NIC. FROG. Two very honeſt gentlemen, I aſſure you, that have done me ſome ſervice. To tell you plainly, Major Ab. denotes thy greater ability, and Major Will. thy greater willingneſs to carry on this law-ſuit. It was but reaſonable that thou ſhouldſt pay both for thy power and thy poſitiveneſs.

J. BULL. I believe I ſhall have thoſe two honeſt majors diſcount on my ſide in a little time.

NIC. FROG. Why all this higgling with thy friend about ſuch a paltry ſum? Does this become the

the generoſity of the noble and rich John Bull? I wonder thou art not aſhamed. Oh Hocus! Hocus! where art thou? It uſed to go another-guiſe manner in thy time. When a poor man has almoſt undone himſelf for thy ſake, thou art for fleecing him, and fleecing him; is that thy conſcience, John?

J. BULL. Very pleaſant indeed! It is well known thou retaineſt thy lawyers by the year, ſo a freſh law-ſuit adds but little to thy expences; they are thy cuſtomers; I hardly ever ſell them a farthing's worth of any thing: nay, thou haſt ſet up an eating-houſe, where the whole tribe of them ſpend all they can rap or run *. If it were well reckoned, I believe thou getteſt more of my money, than thou ſpendeſt of thy own; however, if thou wilt needs plead poverty, own, at leaſt, that thy accompts are falſe.

NIC. FROG. No, marry, won't I; I refer myſelf to theſe honeſt gentlemen; let them judge between us. Let eſquire South ſpeak his mind, whether my accompts are not right, and whether we ought not to go on with our law-ſuit.

J. BULL. Conſult the butchers about keeping of Lent. Doſt think, that John Bull will be tried by Piepowders †? I tell you once for all,

* The money ſpent in Holland and Flanders.

† Court of Piepowders *(Curia pedis pulverizati)* is a court of record, incident to every fair; whereof the ſteward is judge, and the trial is by merchants and traders in the fair. It is ſo called, becauſe it is moſt uſual in the ſummer; and becauſe of the expedition in hearing cauſes, for the matter is to be done, complained of, heard, and determined the ſame day, that is, before the duſt goes off the feet of the plaintiffs and defendants.

John

John Bull knows where his ſhoe pinches: none of your eſquires ſhall give him the law, as long as he wears this truſty weapon by his ſide, or has an inch of broad-cloth in his ſhop.

NIC. FROG. Why there it is; you will be both judge and party; I am ſorry thou diſcovereſt ſo much of thy head-ſtrong humour before theſe ſtrange gentlemen: I have often told thee it would prove thy ruin ſome time or other: let it never be ſaid that the famous John Bull has departed in deſpite of court.

J. BULL. And will it not reflect as much on thy character, Nic., to turn barretter in thy old days; a ſtirrer up of quarrels among thy neighbours? I tell thee, Nic., ſome time or other thou wilt repent this.

[But John ſaw clearly he ſhould have nothing but wrangling, and that he ſhould have as little ſucceſs in ſettling his accompts, as ending the compoſition. "Since they will needs overload my "ſhoulders," quoth John, "I ſhall throw down "the burden with a ſquaſh among them, take it "up who dares; a man has a fine time of it, "among a combination of ſharpers, that vouch "for one another's honeſty. John, look to thy-"ſelf; old Lewis makes reaſonable offers; when "thou haſt ſpent the ſmall pittance that is left, "thou wilt make a glorious figure, when thou art "brought to live upon Nic. Frog's and eſquire "South's generoſity and gratitude: if they uſe "thee thus, when they want thee, what will they

"do

" do, when thou wanteſt them? I ſay again, " John, look to thyſelf."

John wiſely ſtifled his reſentments, and told the company, that in a little time he ſhould give them law, or ſomething better.]

ALL. Law! law! Sir, by all means. What is twenty-two poor years towards the finiſhing a law-ſuit? For the love of God, more law, Sir*!

J. BULL. Prepare your demands; how many years more of law do you want, that I may order my affairs accordingly? In the mean while, farewell.

CHAP. XVII.

How John Bull *found all his family in an uproar at home* †.

NIC. FROG, who thought of nothing but carrying John to the market, and there diſpoſing of him as his own proper goods, was mad to find that John thought himſelf now of age to look after his own affairs. He reſolved to traverſe this new project, and to make him uneaſy in his own family. He had corrupted or deluded moſt of his ſervants into the moſt extravagant conceits in the world; that their maſter was run mad, and wore a dagger in one pocket, and poiſon in the other; that he had ſold his wife and children to

* Clamours for continuing the war.

† Clamours about the danger of the ſucceſſion.

Lewis,

Lewis, diſinherited his heir, and was going to ſettle his eſtate upon a pariſh-boy; that if they did not look after their maſter, he would do ſome very miſchievous thing. When John came home, he found a more ſurpriſing ſcene than any he had yet met with, and that you will ſay was ſomewhat extraordinary.

He called his cook-maid Betty to beſpeak his dinner: Betty told him, "That ſhe begged his "pardon, ſhe could not dreſs dinner, till ſhe knew "what he intended to do with his will." "Why, "Betty," quoth John, "thou art not run mad, "art thou? My will at preſent is to have din-"ner." "That may be," quoth Betty, "but "my conſcience won't allow me to dreſs it, till I "know whether you intend to do righteous things "by your heir?" "I am ſorry for that, Betty," quoth John, "I muſt find ſomebody elſe then." Then he called John the barber. "Before I be-"gin," quoth John, "I hope your honour won't "be offended, if I aſk you whether you intend to "alter your will? If you won't give me a poſi-"tive anſwer, your beard may grow down to your "middle, for me." "'Igad ſo it ſhall," quoth Bull, "for I will never truſt my throat in ſuch a "mad fellow's hands. Where's Dick the butler?" "Look ye," quoth Dick, "I am very willing to "ſerve you in my calling, d' ye ſee; but there are "ſtrange reports, and plain dealing is beſt, d' ye "ſee; I muſt be ſatisfied if you intend to leave all "to your nephew, and if Nic. Frog is ſtill your "executor, d' ye ſee; if you will not ſatisfy me as

"to

" to theſe points, you may drink with the ducks."
" And ſo I will," quoth John, " rather than keep
" a butler that loves my heir better than myſelf."
Hob the ſhoe-maker, and Pricket the taylor, told him, " They would moſt willingly ſerve him in
" their ſeveral ſtations, if he would promiſe them
" never to talk with Lewis Baboon, and let Ni-
" cholas Frog, linen-draper, manage his concerns;
" that they could neither make ſhoes nor clothes
" to any, that were not in good correſpondence
" with their worthy friend Nicholas."

J. BULL. Call Andrew my journeyman. How go affairs, Andrew? I hope the Devil has not taken poſſeſſion of thy body too.

ANDREW. No, Sir; I only deſire to know what you would do if you were dead?

J. BULL. Juſt as other dead folks do, Andrew. —This is amazing! [Aſide.

ANDREW. I mean if your nephew ſhall inherit your eſtate?

J. BULL. That depends upon himſelf. I ſhall do nothing to hinder him.

ANDREW. But will you make it ſure?

J. BULL. Thou meaneſt, that I ſhould put him in poſſeſſion, for I can make it no ſurer without that; he has all the law can give him.

ANDREW. Indeed poſſeſſion, as you ſay, would make it much ſurer; they ſay, it is eleven points of the law.

[John began now to think that they were all enchanted; he enquired about the age of the
" moon;

moon; if Nic. had not given them ſome intoxicating potion, or if old mother Jeniſa was ſtill alive? "No, o' my faith," quoth Harry, "I believe there is no potion in the caſe, but a little "*aurum potabile*. You will have more of this by "and by." He had ſcarce ſpoke the word, when another friend of John's accoſted him after the following manner:

"Since thoſe worthy perſons, who are as much "concerned for your ſafety as I am, have em-"ployed me as their orator, I deſire to know "whether you will have it by way of Syllogiſm, "Enthymem, Dilemma, or Sorites."

John now began to be diverted with their extravagance.]

J. BULL. Let's have a Sorites by all means; though they are all new to me.

FRIEND. It is evident to all, who are verſed in hiſtory, that there were two ſiſters that played the whore two thouſand years ago: therefore it plainly follows, that it is not lawful for John Bull to have any manner of intercourſe with Lewis Baboon: if it is not lawful for John Bull to have any manner of intercourſe (correſpondence, if you will, that is much the ſame thing), then, *à fortiori*, it is much more unlawful for the ſaid John to make over his wife and children to the ſaid Lewis: if his wife and children are not to be made over, he is not to wear a dagger and ratſbane in his pockets: if he wears a dagger and ratſbane, it muſt be to do miſchief to himſelf or ſomebody elſe: if he intends to

do miſchief, he ought to be under guardians, and there is none ſo fit as myſelf, and ſome other worthy perſons, who have a commiſſion for that purpoſe from Nic. Frog, the executor of his will and teſtament.

J. Bull. And this is your Sorites, you ſay? ——With that he ſnatched a good tough oaken cudgel, and began to brandiſh it; then happy was the man, that was firſt at the door: crowding to get out, they tumbled down ſtairs; and it is credibly reported ſome of them dropped very valuable things in the hurry, which were picked up by others of the family.

"That any of theſe rogues," quoth John, "ſhould imagine, I am not as much concerned as "they about having my affairs in a ſettled condi- "tion, or that I would wrong my heir for I know "not what! Well, Nic., I really cannot but ap- "plaud thy diligence; I muſt own this is really a "pretty ſort of a trick, but it ſhan't do thy buſi- "neſs for all that."

CHAP. XVIII.

How Lewis Baboon *came to viſit* John Bull, *and what paſſed between them* *.

[I think it is but ingenuous to acquaint the reader, that this chapter was not written by Sir Humphrey himſelf, but by another very able pen of the univerſity of Grub-ſtreet.]

* Private negotiations about Dunkirk.

JOHN had (by ſome good inſtructions given him by Sir Roger) got the better of his choleric temper, and wrought himſelf up to a great ſteadineſs of mind, to purſue his own intereſt through all impediments that were thrown in the way: he began to leave off ſome of his old acquaintance, his roaring and bullying about the ſtreets; he put on a ſerious air, knit his brows, and, for the time, had made a very conſiderable progreſs in politics, conſidering that he had been kept a ſtranger to his own affairs. However, he could not help diſcovering ſome remains of his nature, when he happened to meet with a foot-ball, or a match at cricket; for which Sir Roger was ſure to take him to taſk. John was walking about his room, with folded arms, and a moſt thoughtful countenance: his ſervant brought him word, that one Lewis Baboon below wanted to ſpeak with him. John had got an impreſſion, that Lewis was ſo deadly cunning a man, that he was afraid to venture himſelf alone with him: at laſt he took heart of grace: "Let him come up," quoth he; "it is but ſtick-"ing to my point, and he can never over-reach "me."

LEWIS BABOON. Monſieur Bull, I will frankly acknowledge, that my behaviour to my neighbours has been ſomewhat uncivil, and I believe you will readily grant me, that I have met with uſage accordingly. I was fond of back-ſword and cudgel-play from my youth, and I now bear in my body many a black and blue gaſh and ſcar, God knows. I had as good a warehouſe, and as fair poſſeſſions,

as any of my neighbours, though I ſay it; but a contentious temper, flattering ſervants, and unfortunate ſtars, have brought me into circumſtances that are not unknown to you. Theſe my misfortunes are heightened by domeſtic calamities. That I need not relate. I am a poor battered old fellow, and I would willingly end my days in peace: but, alas! I ſee but ſmall hopes of that; for every new circumſtance affords an argument to my enemies, to purſue their revenge; formerly I was to be banged, becauſe I was too ſtrong, and now, becauſe I am too weak to reſiſt; I am to be brought down when too rich, and oppreſſed when too poor. Nic. Frog has uſed me like a ſcoundrel; you are a gentleman, and I freely put myſelf in your hands, to diſpoſe of me as you think fit.

J. Bull. Look you, Maſter Baboon, as to your uſage of your neighbours, you had beſt not dwell too much upon that chapter; let it ſuffice, at preſent, that you have been met with: you have been rolling a great ſtone up hill all your life, and at laſt it has come tumbling down, till it is like to cruſh you to pieces: plain dealing is beſt. If you have any particular mark, Mr. Baboon, whereby one may know when you fib, and when you ſpeak truth, you had beſt tell it me, that one may proceed accordingly; but ſince at preſent I know of none ſuch, it is better that you ſhould truſt me, than that I ſhall truſt you.

L. Baboon. I know of no particular mark of veracity among us tradeſmen, but intereſt; and it is manifeſtly mine not to deceive you at this

this time; you may ſafely truſt me, I can aſſure you.

J. BULL. The truſt I give is in ſhort this; I muſt have ſomething in hand, before I make the bargain, and the reſt before it is concluded.

L. BABOON. To ſhew you I deal fairly, name your ſomething.

J. BULL. I need not tell thee, old boy; thou canſt gueſs.

L. BABOON. Eccleſdown-caſtle *, I'll warrant you, becauſe it has been formerly in your family! Say no more, you ſhall have it.

J. BULL. I ſhall have it to m'own ſelf?

L. BABOON. To thy n'own ſelf.

J. BULL. Every wall, gate, room, and inch of Eccleſdown-caſtle, you ſay?

L. BABOON. Juſt ſo.

J. BULL. Every ſingle ſtone of Eccleſdown-caſtle, to m'own ſelf, ſpeedily?

L. BABOON. When you pleaſe; what needs more words?

J. BULL. But tell me, old boy, haſt thou laid aſide all thy equivocals and mentals in this caſe?

L. BABOON. There's nothing like matter of fact; ſeeing is believing.

J. BULL. Now thou talk'ſt to the purpoſe; let us ſhake hands, old boy. Let me aſk thee one queſtion more: What haſt thou to do, to meddle with the affairs of my family? to diſpoſe of my eſtate, old boy?

* Dunkirk.

L. BABOON. Juſt as much as you have to do with the affairs of lord Strutt.

J. BULL. Ay, but my trade, my very being was concerned in that.

L. BABOON. And my intereſt was concerned in the other: but let us both drop our pretences; for I believe it is a moot point, whether I am more likely to make a Maſter Bull, or you a Lord Strutt.

J. BULL. Agreed, old boy; but then I muſt have ſecurity, that I ſhall carry my broad cloth to market, old boy.

L. BABOON. That you ſhall: Eccleſdown-caſtle! Eccleſdown! remember that: why would'ſt thou not take it, when it was offered thee ſome years ago?

J. BULL. I would not take it, becauſe they told me thou would'ſt not give it me.

L. BABOON. How could Monſieur Bull be ſo groſsly abuſed by downright nonſenſe? they that adviſed you to refuſe, muſt have believed I intended to give, elſe why would they not make the experiment? but I can tell you more of that matter, than perhaps you know at preſent.

J. BULL. But what ſay'ſt thou as to the Eſquire, Nic. Frog, and the reſt of the tradeſmen? I muſt take care of them.

L. BABOON. Thou haſt but ſmall obligations to Nic. to my certain knowledge: he has not uſed me like a gentleman.

J. BULL. Nic. indeed is not very nice in your punctilios of ceremony; he is clowniſh, as a man

may

may ſay: belching and calling of names have been allowed him, time out of mind, by preſcription: but, however, we are engaged in one common cauſe, and I muſt look after him.

L. BABOON. All matters that relate to him, and the reſt of the plaintiffs in this law-ſuit, I will refer to your juſtice.

CHAP. XIX.

Nic. Frog's *letter to* John Bull; *wherein he endeavours to vindicate all his conduct, with relation to* John Bull *and the law-ſuit.*

NIC. perceived now that his cully had eloped, that John intended henceforth to deal without a broker; but he was reſolved to leave no ſtone unturned to recover his bubble: among other artifices, he wrote a moſt obliging letter, which he ſent him printed in a fair character.

DEAR FRIEND*,

" WHEN I conſidered the late ill uſage I have
" met with from you, I was reflecting what
" it was that could provoke you to it, but upon a
" narrow inſpection into my conduct, I can find
" nothing to reproach myſelf with, but too partial
" a concern for your intereſt. You no ſooner ſet
" this compoſition a-foot, but I was ready to com-
" ply, and prevented your very wiſhes; and the

* Subſtance of the States letter.

" affair might have been ended before now, had it
" not been for the greater concerns of eſquire
" South, and the other poor creatures embarked in
" the ſame common cauſe, whoſe ſafety touches me
" to the quick. You ſeemed a little jealous, that
" I had dealt unfairly with you in money-matters,
" till it appeared by your own accounts, that
" there was ſomething due to me upon the ba-
" lance. Having nothing to anſwer to ſo plain a
" demonſtration, you began to complain, as if I
" had been familiar with your reputation; when it
" is well known, not only I, but the meaneſt ſer-
" vants in my family, talk of you with the utmoſt
" reſpect. I have always, as far as in me lies,
" exhorted your ſervants and tenants to be dutiful;
" not that I any way meddle in your domeſtic
" affairs, which were very unbecoming for me to
" do. If ſome of your ſervants expreſs their great
" concern for you, in a manner that is not ſo very
" polite, you ought to impute it to their extraor-
" dinary zeal, which deſerves a reward, rather
" than a reproof. You cannot reproach me for
" want of ſucceſs at the Salutation, ſince I am not
" maſter of the paſſions and intereſts of other folks,
" I have beggared myſelf with this law-ſuit, un-
" dertaken merely in complaiſance to you; and if
" you would have had but a little patience, I had
" ſtill greater things in reſerve, that I intended to
" have done for you. I hope, what I have ſaid
" will prevail with you to lay aſide your unreaſon-
" able jealouſies, and that we may have no more
" meetings at the Salutation, ſpending our time

" and

" and money to no purpoſe. My concern for " your welfare and proſperity almoſt makes me " mad. You may be aſſured I will continue to " be

" Your affectionate
" Friend and ſervant,
NIC. FROG."

John received this with a good deal of *ſang froid*; *tranſeat*, quoth John, *cum cæteris erroribus*. He was now at his eaſe; he ſaw he could now make a very good bargain for himſelf, and a very ſafe one for other folks. " My ſhirt," quoth he, " is " near me, but my ſkin is nearer: while I take " care of the welfare of other folks, nobody can " blame me to apply a little balſam to my own " ſores. It's a pretty thing, after all, for a man " to do his own buſineſs; a man has ſuch a tender " concern for himſelf, there's nothing like it. " This is ſomething better, I trow, than for John " Bull to be ſtanding in the market, like a great " dray-horſe, with Frog's paws upon his head.— " What will you give me for this beaſt?—Servi- " teur Nic. Frog, you may kiſs my backſide if " you pleaſe. Though John Bull has not read " your Ariſtotles, Platos, and Machiavels, he can " ſee as far into a mill-ſtone as another." With that, John began to chuckle and laugh, till he was like to have burſt his ſides.

CHAP. XX.

*The diſcourſe * that paſſed between* Nic. Frog *and Eſquire* South, *which* John Bull *overheard.*

JOHN thought every minute a year, till he got into Eccleſdown-caſtle; he repairs to the Salutation, with a deſign to break the matter gently to his partners; before he entered, he overheard Nic. and the Eſquire in a very pleaſant conference.

ESQ. SOUTH. Oh the ingratitude and injuſtice of mankind! that John Bull, whom I have honoured with my friendſhip and protection ſo long, ſhould flinch at laſt, and pretend that he can diſburſe no more money for me! that the family of the Souths, by his ſneaking temper, ſhould be kept out of their own!

NIC. FROG. An't like your worſhip, I am in amaze at it; I think the rogue ſhould be compelled to his duty.

ESQ. SOUTH. That he ſhould prefer his ſcandalous pelf, the duſt and dregs of the earth, to the proſperity and grandeur of my family!

NIC. FROG. Nay, he is miſtaken there too; for he would quickly lick himſelf whole again by his vails. It's ſtrange he ſhould prefer Philip Baboon's cuſtom to eſquire South's.

ESQ. SOUTH. As you ſay, that my clothier, that is to get ſo much by the purchaſe, ſhould refuſe to

* Negotiations between the Emperor and the Dutch for continuing the war, and getting the property of Flanders.

put

put me in poſſeſſion; did you ever know any man's tradeſman ſerve him ſo before?

NIC. FROG. No, indeed, an't pleaſe your worſhip, it is a very unuſual proceeding; and I would not have been guilty of it for the world. If your honour had not a great ſtock of moderation and patience, you would not bear it ſo well as you do.

ESQ. SOUTH. It is moſt intolerable, that's certain, Nic. and I will be revenged.

NIC. FROG. Methinks it is ſtrange, that Philip Baboon's tenants do not all take your honour's part, conſidering how good and gentle a maſter you are.

ESQ. SOUTH. True, Nic. but few are ſenſible of merit in this world: it is a great comfort, to have ſo faithful a friend as thyſelf in ſo critical a juncture.

NIC. FROG. If all the world ſhould forſake you, be aſſured Nic. Frog never will; let us ſtick to our point, and we'll manage Bull, I'll warrant ye.

ESQ. SOUTH. Let me kiſs thee, dear Nic. I have found one honeſt man among a thouſand at laſt.

NIC. FROG. If it were poſſible, your honour has it in your power to wed me ſtill cloſer to your intereſt.

ESQ. SOUTH. Tell me quickly, dear Nic.

NIC. FROG. You know I am your tenant; the difference between my leaſe and an inheritance is ſuch a trifle, as I am ſure you will not grudge your poor friend; that will be an encouragement to go on; beſides it will make Bull as mad as the devil: you and I ſhall be able to manage him then to ſome purpoſe.

ESQ.

ESQ. SOUTH. Say no more, it ſhall be done, Nic. to thy heart's content.

John all this while was liſtening to this cômical dialogue, and laughed heartily in his ſleeve at the pride and ſimplicity of the Eſquire, and the ſly roguery of his friend Nic. Then of a ſudden bolting into the room, he began to tell them, that he believed he had brought Lewis to reaſonable terms, if they would pleaſe to hear them.

Then they all bawl'd out aloud, "No compoſi-"tion, Long live eſquire South and the law!" As John was going to proceed, ſome roared, ſome ſtamped with their feet, others ſtopt their ears with their fingers.

Nay, gentlemen, quoth John, if you will but ſtop proceeding for a while, you ſhall judge yourſelves whether * Lewis's propoſals are reaſonable.

ALL. Very fine indeed, ſtop proceeding, and ſo loſe a term.

J. BULL. Not ſo neither, we have ſomething by way of advance, he will put us in poſſeſſion of his manor and caſtle of Eccleſdown.

NIC. FROG. What doſt thou talk of us, thou meaneſt thyſelf.

J. BULL. When Frog took poſſeſſion of any thing, it was always ſaid to be for us, and why may not John Bull be us, as well as Nic. Frog was us? I hope John Bull is no more confined to ſingularity than Nic. Frog; or, take it ſo, the conſtant doctrine,

* Propoſals for ceſſation of arms, and delivery of Dunkirk.

that

that thou haſt preached up for many years, was, That Thou and I are One; and why muſt we be ſuppoſed Two in this caſe, that were always One before? It's impoſſible that Thou and I can fall out, Nic. we muſt truſt one another; I have truſted thee with a great many things, prithee truſt me with this one trifle.

NIC. FROG. That principle is true in the main, but there is ſome ſpeciality in this caſe, that makes it highly inconvenient for us both.

J. BULL. Thoſe are your jealouſies, that the common enemies ſow between us; how often haſt thou warned me of thoſe rogues, Nic. that would make us miſtruſtful of one another?

NIC. FROG. This Eccleſdown-Caſtle is only a bone of contention.

J. BULL. It depends upon you to make it ſo, for my part I am as peaceable as a lamb.

NIC. FROG. But do you conſider the unwholeſomeneſs of the air and ſoil, the expences of reparations and ſervants? I would ſcorn to accept of ſuch a quagmire.

J. BULL. You are a great man, Nic. but in my circumſtances, I muſt be e'en content to take it as it is.

NIC. FROG. And you are really ſo ſilly, as to believe the old cheating rogue will give it you?

J. BULL. I believe nothing but matter of fact, I ſtand and fall by that, I am reſolved to put him to it.

NIC.

NIC. FROG. And ſo relinquiſh the hopefulleſt cauſe in the world, a claim that will certainly in the end make thy fortune for ever!

J. BULL. Wilt thou purchaſe it, Nic? thou ſhalt have a lumping pennyworth; nay, rather than we ſhould differ, I'll give thee ſomething to take it off my hands.

NIC. FROG. If thou would'ſt but moderate that haſty impatient temper of thine, thou ſhould'ſt quickly ſee a better thing than all that. What ſhould'ſt thou think to find old Lewis turned out of his paternal eſtates, and the manſion-houſe of Clay-pool *? Would not that do thy heart good, to ſee thy old friend Nic. Frog, lord of Clay-pool? then thou and thy wife and children ſhould walk in my gardens, buy toys, drink lemonade, and now and then we ſhould have a country dance.

J. BULL. I love to be plain, I'd as lieve ſee myſelf in Eccleſdown-caſtle, as thee in Clay-pool. I tell you again, Lewis gives this as a pledge of his ſincerity; if you won't ſtop proceeding to hear him, I will.

* Clay-pool. Paris. Lutetia.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

The reſt of Nic's *ſetches to keep* John *out of* Eccleſ-down-caſtle *.

WHEN Nic. could not diſſuade John by argument, he tried to move his pity; he pretended to be ſick and like to die, that he ſhould leave his wife and children in a ſtarving condition, if John did abandon him; that he was hardly able to crawl about the room, far leſs capable to look after ſuch a troubleſome buſineſs as this law-ſuit, and therefore begged that his good friend would not leave him. When he ſaw that John was ſtill inexorable, he pulled out a caſe-knife, with which he uſed to ſnicker-ſnee, and threatened to cut his own throat. Thrice he aimed the knife to his wind-pipe with a moſt determined threatening air. "What ſignifies "life, quoth he, in this languiſhing condition? It "will be ſome pleaſure, that my friends will re-"venge my death upon this barbarous man, that "has been the cauſe it." All this while John looked ſedate and calm, neither offering in the leaſt to ſnatch the knife, nor ſtop his blow, truſting to the tenderneſs Nic. had for his own perſon: when he perceived, that John was immoveable in his purpoſe, he applied himſelf to Lewis.

"Art thou," quoth he, "turned bubble in thy old "age, from being a ſharper in thy youth? What

* Attempts to hinder the ceſſation, and taking poſſeſſion of Dunkirk.

"occaſion

" occaſion haſt thou to give up Eccleſdown-caſtle to " John Bull? his friendſhip is not worth a ruſh; " give it me, and I'll make it worth thy while. " If thou diſlikeſt that propoſition, keep it thyſelf; " I'd rather thou ſhould'ſt have it than he. If " thou hearkeneſt not to my advice, take what " follows; eſquire South and I will go on with " our law-ſuit in ſpite of John Bull's teeth."

L. BABOON. Monſieur Bull has uſed me like a gentleman, and I am reſolved to make good my promiſe, and truſt him for the conſequences.

NIC. FROG. Then I tell thee thou art an old doating fool.——With that, Nic. bounced up with a ſpring equal to that of one of your nimbleſt tumblers or rope-dancers, and fell foul upon John Bull, to ſnatch the cudgel he had in his hand *, that he might thwack Lewis with it: John held it faſt, ſo that there was no wrenching it from him. At laſt 'ſquire South buckled to, to aſſiſt his friend Nic.: John hauled on one ſide, and they two on the other; ſometimes they were like to pull John over; then it went all of a ſudden again on John's ſide; ſo they went ſee-ſawing up and down, from one end of the room to the other. Down tumbled the tables, bottles, glaſſes, and tobacco-pipes: the wine and the tobacco were all ſpilt about the room, and the little fellows were almoſt trod under foot, till more of the tradeſmen, joining with Nic. and the 'ſquire, John was hardly able to pull againſt them all, yet would he never quit hold of his

* The army.

truſty

truſty cudgel: which, by the contrary force of two ſo great powers, broke ſhort in his hands *. Nic. ſeized the longer end, and with it began to baſtinado old Lewis, who had ſlunk into a corner, waiting the event of this ſquabble. Nic. came up to him with an inſolent menacing air, ſo that the old fellow was forced to ſkuttle out of the room, and retire behind a dung-cart. He called to Nic.: "Thou inſolent jackanapes! Time was when thou "durſt not have uſed me ſo; thou now takeſt me "unprovided; but, old and infirm as I am, I ſhall find "a weapon, by and by, to chaſtiſe thy impudence."

When John Bull had recovered his breath, he began to parly with Nic.: "Friend Nic., I am "glad to find thee ſo ſtrong, after thy great com-"plaints: really thy motions, Nic., are pretty "vigorous for a conſumptive man. As for thy "worldly affairs, Nic., if it can do thee any ſervice, "I freely make over to thee this profitable law-"ſuit, and I deſire all theſe gentlemen to bear "witneſs to this my act and deed. Yours be all "the gain, as mine has been the charges; I have "brought it to bear finely: However, all I have "laid out upon it goes for nothing; thou ſhalt "have it with all its appurtenances; I aſk nothing "but leave to go home."

NIC. FROG. The counſel are fee'd, and all things prepared for a trial; thou ſhalt be forced to ſtand the iſſue: it ſhall be pleaded in thy name as well as mine: go home if thou can'ſt; the gates

* The ſeparation of the army.

are

are ſhut, the turnpikes locked, and the roads barricadoed *.

J. BULL. Even theſe very ways, Nic., that thou toldeſt me were as open to me as thyſelf? if I can't paſs with my own equipage, what can I expect for my goods and waggons? I am denied paſſage through thoſe very grounds, that I have purchaſed with my own money: however, I am glad I have made the experiment, it may ſerve me in ſome ſtead.

[John Bull was ſo overjoyed that he was going to take poſſeſſion of Eccleſdown, that nothing could vex him. "Nic." quoth he, "I am juſt "a-going to leave thee; caſt a kind look upon "me at parting."

Nic. looked ſour and grum, and would not open his mouth.]

J. BULL. I wiſh thee all the ſucceſs that thy heart can deſire, and that theſe honeſt gentlemen of the long robe may have their belly-full of law.

[Nic. could ſtand it no longer; but flung out of the room with diſdain, and beckoned the lawyers to follow him.]

J. BULL. B'uy, b'uy, Nic.; not one poor ſmile at parting? won't you ſhake your day-day, Nic.? b'uy, Nic.——With that, John marched out of the common road, 'croſs the country, to take poſſeſſion of Eccleſdown.

* Difficulty of the march of part of the army to Dunkirk.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Of the great joy that John *expreſſed when he got poſſeſſion of* * Eccleſdown.

WHEN John had got into his caſtle, he ſeemed like Ulyſſes upon his plank after he had been well ſouſed in ſalt-water: who (as Homer ſays) was as glad as a judge going to ſit down to dinner, after hearing a long cauſe upon the bench. I dare ſay John Bull's joy was equal to that of either of the two: he ſkipped from room to room; ran up ſtairs and down ſtairs, from the kitchen to the garrets, and from the garrets to the kitchen; he peeped into every cranny; ſometimes he admired the beauty of the architecture, and the vaſt ſolidity of the maſon's work; at other times he commended the ſymmetry and proportion of the rooms. He walked about the gardens; he bathed himſelf in the canal, ſwimming, diving, and beating the liquid element, like a milk-white ſwan. The hall reſounded with the ſprightly violin, and the martial hautboy. The family tript it about and capered, like hail-ſtones bounding from a marble floor. Wine, ale, and October flew about as plentifully as kennel-water: then a frolick took John in the head to call up ſome of Nic. Frog's penſioners, that had been ſo mutinous in his family.

* Dunkirk.

J. BULL. Are you glad to ſee your maſter in Eccleſdown-caſtle?

ALL. Yes, indeed, Sir.

J. BULL. Extremely glad?

ALL. Extremely glad, Sir.

J. BULL. Swear to me, that you are ſo.

Then they began to damn and ſink their ſouls to the loweſt pit of hell, if any perſon in the world rejoiced more than they did.

J. BULL. Now hang me if I don't believe you are a parcel of perjured raſcals; however take this bumper of October to your maſter's health.

Then John got upon the battlements, and looking over, he called to Nic. Frog:

"How d'ye do, Nic? D'ye ſee where I am, "Nic? I hope the cauſe goes on ſwimmingly, Nic. "When doſt thou intend to go to Clay-pool, Nic? "Wilt thou buy there ſome high heads of the "neweſt cut for my daughters? How comeſt thou "to go with thy arm tied up? Has old Lewis "given thee a rap over thy fingers-ends? Thy "weapon was a good one, when I wielded it, but "the butt-end remains in my hands. I am ſo buſy "in packing up my goods, that I have no time to "talk with thee any longer. It would do thy heart "good to ſee what waggon-loads I am preparing "for market. If thou wanteſt any good office of "mine, for all that has happened, I will uſe thee "well Nic. B'uy Nic."

POSTSCRIPT.

IT has been diſputed among the Literati of Grubſtreet, whether Sir Humphry proceeded any farther into the Hiſtory of John Bull. By diligent enquiry we have found the titles of ſome chapters, which appear to be a continuation of it; and are as follow.

Chap. I. *How* John *was made angry with the* articles of agreement. *How he kicked the parchment through the houſe, up ſtairs and down ſtairs, and put himſelf in a great heat thereby.*

Chap. II. *How in his paſſion he was going to cut off Sir* Roger's *head with a* cleaver. *Of the ſtrange manner of Sir* Roger's *eſcaping the blow, by* laying his head upon the dreſſer.

Chap. III. *How ſome of* John's *ſervants attempted to ſcale his houſe with rope-ladders; and how many unfortunately dangled in the ſame.*

Chap. IV. *Of the methods by which* John *endeavoured to preſerve the peace among his neighbours: how he kept a pair of* ſtill-yards *to weigh them; and by diet, purging, vomiting, and bleeding, tried to bring them to* equal bulk *and* ſtrength.

Chap. V. *Of falſe accounts of the* weights *given in by ſome of the* journeymen; *and of the* Newmarket *tricks, that were practiſed at the* ſtill-yards.

Chap. VI. *How* John's *new journeymen brought him other-guiſe accounts of the* ſtill-yards.

Chap. VII. *How Sir* * Swain Northy *was, by bleeding, purging, and a ſteel-diet, brought into a* conſumption; *and how* John *was forced afterwards to give him the* gold-cordial.

Chap. VIII. *How* † Peter Bear *was* overfed, *and afterwards refuſed to ſubmit to the courſe of phyſic.*

Chap. IX. *How* John *pampered Eſquire* South *with tit-bits, till he grew wanton; how he got drunk with* Calabrian *wine, and longed for* Sicilian *beef, and how* John *carried him thither in his barge.*

Chap. X. *How the Eſquire, from a foul-feeder, grew dainty: how he longed for* mangoes, ſpices, *and* Indian birds-neſts, *&c. and could not* ſleep *but in a* Chintz *bed.*

Chap. XI. *The Eſquire turned tradeſman; how he ſet up a* ‡ China-ſhop *over-againſt* Nic. Frog.

Chap. XII. *How he procured* Spaniſh flies *to bliſter his neighbours, and as a provocative to himſelf. As likewiſe how he raviſhed* Nic. Frog's *favourite* daughter.

* King of Sweden. † Czar of Muſcovy.
‡ The Oſtend company.

Chap.

Chap. XIII. *How* Nic. Frog *hearing the girl ſqueak, went to call* John Bull *as a conſtable: calling of a conſtable no preventive of a rape.*

Chap. XIV. *How* John *roſe out of his bed in a cold morning to prevent a duel between Eſquire* South *and Lord* Strutt; *how, to his great ſurprize, he found the combatants drinking* Geneva *in a* Brandy-ſhop, *with* Nic's *favourite daughter between them. How they both fell upon* John *ſo that he was forced to fight his way out.*

Chap. XV. *How* John *came with his conſtable's ſtaff to reſcue* Nic's *daughter, and break the Eſquire's* China-ware.

Chap. XVI. *Commentary upon the* Spaniſh *proverb,* Time and I againſt any Two; *or advice to dogmatical politicians, exemplified in ſome new affairs between* John Bull *and* Lewis Baboon.

Chap. XVII. *A diſcourſe of the delightful game of* quadrille. *How* Lewis Baboon *attempted to play a game* ſolo *in clubs, and was beaſted: how* John *called* Lewis *for his King, and was afraid that his own partner ſhould have too many tricks: and how the ſucceſs and ſkill of quadrille depends upon calling a right King.*

PROPOSALS

FOR PRINTING A VERY

CURIOUS DISCOURSE,

ENTITLED

ΨΕΥΔΟΛΟΓΙΑ ΠΟΛΙΤΙΚΗ;

OR,

THE ART OF POLITICAL LYING.

THERE is now in the preſs, a curious piece, entitled, Ψευδολογία Πολιτικὴ; or, The Art of Political Lying; conſiſting of two volumes in quarto.

The PROPOSALS are,

I. That if the author meets with ſuitable encouragement, he intends to deliver the firſt volume to the ſubſcribers by Hilary Term next.

II. The price of both volumes will be, to the ſubſcribers, fourteen ſhillings, ſeven whereof are to be paid down, and the other ſeven at the delivery of the ſecond volume.

III. Thoſe that ſubſcribe for ſix, ſhall have a ſeventh *gratis*; which reduces the price to leſs than ſix ſhillings a volume.

IV. That the ſubſcribers ſhall have their names and places of abode printed at length.

For the encouragement of ſo uſeful a work, it is thought fit the publick ſhould be informed of the contents of the firſt volume, by one who has with great care peruſed the manuſcript.

THE ART OF

POLITICAL LYING.

THE Author, in his preface, makes ſome very judicious reflections upon the original of arts and ſciences: that at firſt they conſiſt of ſcattered theorems and practices, which are handed about amongſt the maſters, and only revealed to the *filii artis*, till ſuch time as ſome great genius appears, who collects theſe disjointed propoſitions, and reduces them into a regular ſyſtem. That this is the caſe of that noble and uſeful art of Political Lying, which in this laſt age having been enriched with ſeveral new diſcoveries, ought not to lie any longer in rubbiſh and confuſion, but may juſtly claim a place in the *Encyclopædia*, eſpecially ſuch as ſerves for a model of education for an able politician. That he propoſes to himſelf no ſmall ſtock of fame in future ages, in being the firſt who has undertaken this deſign; and for the ſame reaſon he hopes the imperfection of his work will be excuſed. He invites all perſons who have any talents that way, or

any new diſcovery, to communicate their thoughts, aſſuring them that honourable mention ſhall be made of them in his work.

The FIRST VOLUME conſiſts of ELEVEN CHAPTERS.

In the firſt chapter of his excellent treatiſe, he reaſons philoſophically concerning the nature of the ſoul of man, and thoſe qualities which render it ſuſceptible of lies. He ſuppoſes the ſoul to be of the nature of a plano-cylindrical ſpeculum, or looking-glaſs; that the plain ſide was made by God Almighty, but that the devil afterwards wrought the other ſide into a cylindrical figure. The plain ſide repreſents objects juſt as they are; and the cylindrical ſide, by the rules of catoptricks, muſt needs repreſent true objects falſe, and falſe objects true: but the cylindrical ſide being much the larger ſurface, takes in a greater compaſs of viſual rays. That upon the cylindrical ſide of the ſoul of man depends the whole art and ſucceſs of Political Lying. The Author, in this chapter, proceeds to reaſon upon the qualities of the mind: as its peculiar fondneſs of the malicious and the miraculous. The tendency of the ſoul towards the malicious, ſprings from ſelf-love, or a pleaſure to find mankind more wicked, baſe, or unfortunate, than ourſelves. The deſign of the miraculous proceeds from the inactivity of the ſoul, or its incapacity to be moved or delighted with any thing that is vulgar or common. The Author having eſtabliſhed the qualities of the mind, upon which his art is founded, he proceeds,

In

In his ſecond chapter, to treat of the nature of Political Lying; which he defines to be, "the art "of convincing the people of ſalutary falſehoods, "for ſome good end." He calls it an art, to diſtinguiſh it from that of telling truth, which does not ſeem to want art; but then he would have this underſtood only as to the invention, becauſe there is indeed more art neceſſary to convince the people of a ſalutary truth, than a ſalutary falſehood. Then he proceeds to prove, that there are ſalutary falſehoods, of which he gives a great many inſtances, both before and after the revolution; and demonſtrates plainly, that we could not have carried on the war ſo long without ſeveral of thoſe ſalutary falſehoods. He gives rules to calculate the value of a Political Lie, in pounds, ſhillings, and pence. By good, he does not mean that which is abſolutely ſo, but what appears ſo to the artiſt, which is a ſufficient ground for him to proceed upon; and he diſtinguiſhes the good, as it commonly is, into *bonum utile*, *dulce*, *et honeſtum*. He ſhews you that there are Political Lies of a mixed nature, which include all the three in different reſpects: that the *utile* reigns generally about the Exchange, the *dulce* and *honeſtum* at the Weſtminſter end of the town. One man ſpreads a lie to ſell or buy ſtock to greater advantage; a ſecond, becauſe it is honourable to ſerve his party; and a third, becauſe it is ſweet to gratify his revenge. Having explained the ſeveral terms of his definition, he proceeds,

In his third chapter, to treat of the lawfulneſs of Political Lying; which he deduces from its true and genuine principles, by enquiring into the ſeveral rights, that mankind have to truth. He ſhews, that people have a right to private truth from their neighbours, and œconomical truth from their own family; that they ſhould not be abuſed by their wives, children, and ſervants; but that they have no right at all to Political Truth; that the people may as well all pretend to be lords of manors, and poſſeſs great eſtates, as to have truth told them in matters of government. The author, with great judgment, ſtates the ſeveral ſhares of mankind in this matter of truth, according to their ſeveral capacities, dignities, and profeſſions; and ſhews you, that children have hardly any ſhare at all; in conſequence of which, they have very ſeldom any truth told them. It muſt be owned, that the author, in this chapter, has ſome ſeeming difficulties to anſwer, and texts of Scripture to explain.

The fourth chapter is wholly employed in this queſtion, "Whether the right of coinage of Poli-" tical Lies be wholly in the government?" The author, who is a true friend to Engliſh liberty, determines in the negative, and anſwers all the arguments of the oppoſite party with great acuteneſs: that as the government of England has a mixture of democratical in it, ſo the right of inventing and ſpreading Political Lies is partly in the people; and their obſtinate adherence to this juſt privilege has been moſt conſpicuous, and ſhined with

with great luſtre, of late years: that it happens very often, that there are no other means left to the good people of England to pull down a miniſtry and government they are weary of, but by exerciſing this their undoubted right: that abundance of Political Lying is a ſure ſign of true Engliſh liberty: that as miniſters do ſometimes uſe tools to ſupport their power, it is but reaſonable that the people ſhould employ the ſame weapon to defend themſelves, and pull them down.

In his fifth chapter, he divides Political Lies into ſeveral ſpecies and claſſes, and gives precepts about the inventing, ſpreading, and propagating the ſeveral ſorts of them: he begins with the *rumores*, and *libelli famoſi*, ſuch as concern the reputation of men in power: where he finds fault with the common miſtake, that takes notice only of one ſort, viz. the detractory or defamatory; whereas in truth there are three ſorts, the detractory, the additory, and the tranſlatory. The additory gives to a great man a larger ſhare of reputation than belongs to him, to enable him to ſerve ſome good end or purpoſe. The detractory, or defamatory, is a lie, which takes from a great man the reputation that juſtly belongs to him, for fear he ſhould uſe it to the detriment of the public. The tranſlatory is a lie, that transfers the merit of a man's good action to another, who is in himſelf more deſerving; or transfers the demerit of a bad action from the true author to a perſon, who is in himſelf leſs deſerving. He gives ſeveral inſtances of very great ſtrokes in all the three kinds, eſpecially

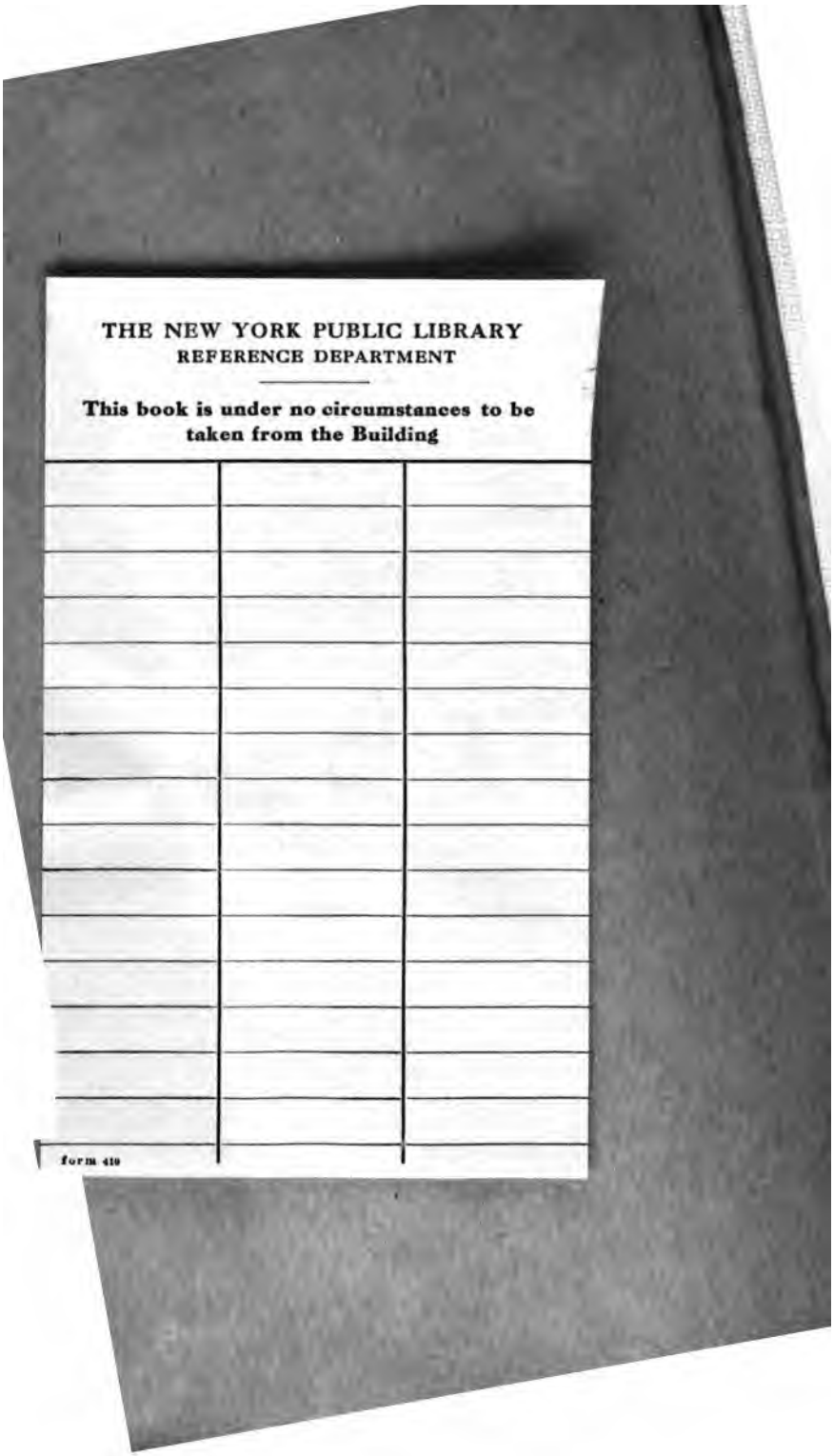
cially in the laſt, when it was neceſſary, for the good of the public, to beſtow the valour and conduct of one man upon another, and that of many to one man; nay even, upon a good occaſion, a man may be robbed of his victory by a perſon, that did not command in the action *. The reſtoring and deſtroying the public, may be aſcribed to perſons, who had no hand in either. The author exhorts all gentlemen practitioners to exerciſe themſelves in the tranſlatory, becauſe the exiſtence of the things themſelves being viſible, and not demanding any proof, there wants nothing to be put upon the public, but a falſe author, or a falſe cauſe; which is no great preſumption upon the credulity of mankind, to whom the ſecret ſprings of things are for the moſt part unknown.

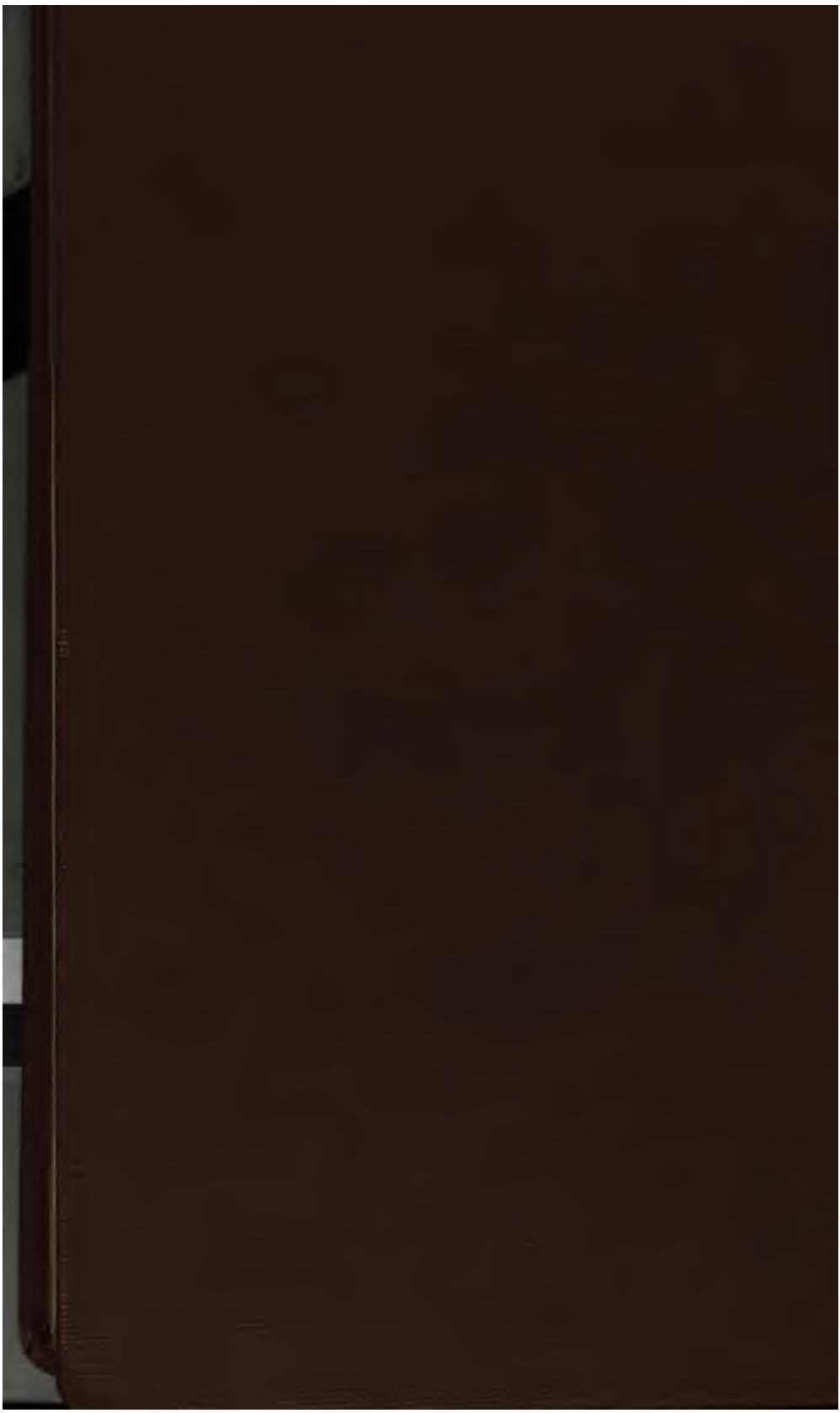
* Major General Webb obtained a glorious victory over the French, near Wynendale, in the year 1708. He was ſent with 6,000 of the confederate troops to guard a great convoy to the allied army beſieging Liſle; Count de la Motte came out from Ghent, with near 24,000 men, to intercept them; but Major General Webb diſpoſed his men with ſuch admirable ſkill, that notwithſtanding the vaſt ſuperiority of numbers, by the pure force of order and diſpoſition, the French were driven back in two or three ſucceſſive attempts; and, after having loſt 6 or 7,000 men, could be brought to charge no more. This may juſtly be reckoned among the greateſt actions of that war: but the Duke of Marlborough's Secretary, in his letter written to England, gave all the honour of it to General Cadogan, the Duke's favourite, who did not come up till after the engagement. This was ſo reſented by General Webb, that he left the army in diſguſt; and, coming into England to do himſelf juſtice, received the unanimous thanks of the Houſe of Commons, for his eminent ſervices by that great action; which was alſo acknowledged, in a diſtinguiſhing manner, by the King of Pruſſia, who beſtowed on him the Order of Generoſity.

The

The author proceeds to give ſome precepts as to the additory: that when one aſcribes any thing to a perſon, which does not belong to him, the lie ought to be calculated not quite contradictory to his known qualities: for example, one would not make the French king preſent at a Proteſtant conventicle; nor, like queen Elizabeth, reſtore the overplus of taxes to his ſubjects. One would not bring in the Emperor giving two months pay in advance to his troops; nor the Dutch paying more than their quota. One would not make the ſame perſon zealous for a ſtanding army, and public liberty; nor an atheiſt ſupport the church; nor a lewd fellow a reformer of manners; nor a hot-headed, crack-brained coxcomb forward for a ſcheme of moderation. But, if it is abſolutely neceſſary that a perſon is to have ſome good adventitious quality given him, the author's precept is, that it ſhould not be done at firſt *in extremo gradu*. For example; they ſhould not make a covetous man give away, all at once, five thouſand pounds in a charitable, generous way; twenty or thirty pounds may ſuffice at firſt. They ſhould not introduce a perſon of remarkable ingratitude to his benefactors, rewarding a poor man for ſome good office that was done him thirty years ago; but they may allow him to acknowledge a ſervice to a perſon, who is capable ſtill to do him another. A man, whoſe perſonal courage is ſuſpected, is not at firſt to drive whole ſquadrons before him: but he may be allowed the merit of ſome ſquabble, or throwing a bottle at his adverſary's

It


THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

form 410